

Birla Central Library

PILANI (Jaipur State)

Class No :- 823

Book No :- W 88 P

Accession No :- 2039

PAPER PRISON

NOVELS BY P. C. WREN

BEAU GESTE
BEAU SABREUR
BEAU IDEAL
GOOD GESTES
SOLDIERS OF MISFORTUNE
THE WAGES OF VIRTUE
STEPSONS OF FRANCE
THE SNAKE AND THE SWORD
FATHER GREGORY
DEW AND MILDEW
DRIFTWOOD SPARS
THE YOUNG STAGERS
THE MAMMON OF
 RIGHTEOUSNESS
MYSTERIOUS WAYE
VALIANT DUST
FLAWED BLADES
ACTION AND PASSION
PORT O' MISSING MEN
BEGGARS' HORSES
SPANISH MAINE
EXPLOSION
SINBAD THE SOLDIER
BUBBLE REPUTATION
FORT IN THE JUNGLE
THE MAN OF A GHOST
WORTH WILE
ROUGH SHOOTING
CARDBOARD CASTLE

EDITED BY P. C. WREN

SOWING GLORY

PAPER PRISON |

BY

PERCIVAL CHRISTOPHER WREN

LONDON

JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET, W.

TO
MRS. JOHN HARDY
OF
SANTIAGO DE CHILE

My dear Dora,

Although I visit you and John with the utmost regularity once every fifteen years, and write to you without fail once every three years, I should also like to dedicate a book to you every decade or so.

I am therefore dedicating this one to You, to happy memories and to the famous hospitality of the Coast.

Yours,

P. C. W.

*Puerto Montt,
S. America,
Feb. 1938.*

First Edition . . . 1939

Made and Printed in Great Britain by Butler & Tanner Ltd., Frome and London

CONTENTS

PART ONE

| | PAGE |
|------------------------------|------|
| MARK CALDON TUYLER | 9 |

PART TWO

| | |
|------------------------------|-----|
| LUKE RIVERS TUYLER | 239 |
|------------------------------|-----|

PART THREE

| | |
|-----------------------------|-----|
| ROSANNE VAN DATEN | 387 |
|-----------------------------|-----|

I

MARK CALDON TUYLER

I

I AM neither superstitious nor a believer in omens and portents, but I have to admit that to-day's series of events has been rather remarkable. I believe that such occurrences are supposed to "go in threes." That has been the number.

And I cannot avoid feeling that things have conspired, and Fate has intended, to bring Luke to the forefront of my mind, and to keep him there—until I do something about it. He always is in my mind, of course, if only at the back of it. And to-day's events have shown me that, if only for Rosanne's sake, the sooner I get him out of it the better. For he is on my mind as well as in it. On my mind, because, whatever I may have done at the time, I have blamed myself ever since. Blamed myself, and not Luke.

He was spoilt, and I spoiled him more than anybody did ; spoiled him more than Father and Mother did ; possibly more, even, than Athene and Rosanne did.

I suppose it was, in a way, natural that, in the shock of the discovery, in my first overwhelming anger and heartbreaking misery, I should not only blame him but secretly curse him, denounce him.

Thank God it was in secret ; and for it I can also thank my old house-master, Charles Rocke, and his eternal slogan '*Blame yourself, if possible,*' a motto

according to which he lived, and endeavoured to make us live.

Rosanne, of course, says that I have nothing whatsoever with which to reproach myself in the matter of Luke's tragedy, but that is Rosanne's comforting way.

Confession is good for the soul. The priests say so, and the psycho-analysts agree; so perhaps I shall feel better if I set it down fully, truthfully, and without bias. I couldn't feel worse, anyhow.

And to-day has made it clear that I must do something or other. Queer that it should have been left for General Hector Mandrell, of all people, to be the deciding cause or factor. Rather heavy, physically and mentally, to play the part of the Last Straw—man of straw though he is.

It began at breakfast-time. I was sitting staring at Luke's picture, brooding, thinking of him, of course, instead of talking to Rosanne, when—he disappeared—and there was a sudden crash that almost made me jump out of my chair.

"*Look! He has . . .*" I began, as Rosanne sprang to her feet and turned round and we both stared at the blank space on the wall above the long old-fashioned sideboard . . . and realized that the portrait had fallen down behind it, smashing the glass. It was a big oil-painting, done in Paris by the famous Roger Lecomte, when he and Luke were *Quartier Latin* students.

I am *not* superstitious; but it affected me queerly, that sudden crashing disappearance of the face that had been there opposite to mine at every meal . . . the eyes that had looked into mine, seeming to hold a message . . . the lips about to speak. . . .

It is absurd to attach significance to an event caused by a rusted wire, a rotted cord, a nail insecure in crumbling mortar, and I refused to let it affect me, but I could see that Rosanne was troubled.

"We won't hang it there again," she said. "Face to face with you. I ought to have moved it."

"It has moved itself, now," said I, and went out of the room.

Luke's face. The eyes watching me. Eyes that haunted me. The lips about to move ; to give me a message. What would he say ? That I should not be sitting in that chair ? That I should never tell Rosanne ? A prayer that I would keep his dreadful secret ?

Which shows the state to which this brooding on the past, this entertainment of an *idée fixe*, had reduced my nerves.

And having realized this, and picked up a book that lay on the table beside my armchair, that I might compel my thoughts to turn to some other subject, I opened it and read.

And then the second of the events that started me writing this.

I did not read the book for long, for it was written by one of those lying knaves or besotted fools who in their wisdom and utter ignorance of the facts, tell us that War brings out all the best in us ; that War is ennobling ; that the fires of War burn out our dross and purify us, and so forth. Presumably, then, a returning army consists of white-souled Galahads whose strength is as the strength of ten because their hearts are pure ! That must be why every war is followed by an increase of crimes of violence. This

particular fool or knave talked of the beauty added to War by the use of the aeroplane, and spoke of young noble souls swooping like angels through the air, the new cavalry of the clouds ; of how War was no longer earth-bound, pedestrian and . . . all the rest of it.

And then he spoke of the beauties of bombing, and suddenly I hurled the book from me, sprang to my feet, and almost lost control. I saw red. I saw that other bomb—that fell at Luke's feet, the bomb that almost blasted the soul from his body, the sight from his eyes, the strength and grit from his character.

"The beauty and poetry of War!"

Had the heroic bomb-dropping poet been before me in the flesh, at that moment, I should have committed murder.

With my bare hands I would have torn his . . .

And I realized that I was trembling from head to foot, sweating like a race-horse—which, for the second time that morning, showed me the condition of my nerves.

War ennobling ! Read of what War did to my brother Luke and to me.

And the third occurrence, the little drama at the Club, an hour later, with General Hector Mandrell and little Simms-Dexter as protagonists.

I never used to hate anybody, except Yrotavál. Not a soul in the world—but I am beginning to hate my neighbour as myself ; and particularly I hate General Mandrell for a stupid pompous ass, arrogant and overbearing ; a man who always does the foolish thing and never says a wise one. His one idea of conversation is to contradict and, presuming on his seniority, to do it with the utmost rudeness.

Did he but realize it, he contradicts himself more than he does anyone else.

I was sitting staring out of the window seeing nothing that was there, and terrible things that were not. Luke's portrait falling; that bomb falling; Luke flung flaming up into the air; buried alive.

Staring, seeing nothing that was there, I became gradually aware of Simms-Dexter, whose hobby is visiting castles and drawing pictures of their interiors, talking to his friend, Major Johnstone.

"Yes, lovely court-yard and banqueting-hall," he was saying. "Dungeons too. I made a sketch of the place where they kept that chap whose hair went white, but not 'in a single night as men's have done from sudden fright,' whom What's-his-name wrote about in . . ."

"*No-one's* hair ever went white in a single night," interrupted General Mandrell loudly. "No, nor grey, either. Lot of damn nonsense."

"Well, General," faltered little Simmy, instead of ignoring the man, "they say that a tremendous shock will . . ."

"Then they are liars," interrupted Mandrell again. "No one's hair ever altered by the slightest shade in a single night. Nor in a single week either. Nor a month. Damn nonsense."

Little Simms-Dexter, afraid of the arrogant old bully, faltered something about it being doubtless one of those popular fallacies which . . . and sat looking foolish, snubbed into silence. Then, before I quite realized what I was doing, I turned and butted in—partly because I like little Simmy, partly because I detest Mandrell, and mainly because my nerves got the better of me again.

"Not a fallacy at all," I said, pointedly addressing Simms-Dexter. "Established fact. A man's hair can turn colour, to some extent, in a single night, even if it doesn't actually go white."

"*Bosh!*" snorted the General, and I carefully forbore to glance at his over-pink fat face, or meet his cold fishy eye.

"Er—one has heard so, of course," stammered Simmy, "b-b-but . . ."

"Heard so!" snorted the General. "D'ye believe all you hear?"

"And I can tell you of someone to whom it actually happened," I added, looking at Simms-Dexter, across Mandrell's arm-chair.

"Really?" said Simmy, perking up. "Someone you actually knew?"

"Know him still, worse luck," I growled.

"Huh!" You 'know someone.' Always a third person!" sneered Mandrell again. "We all know someone else who has heard it or seen it, don't we? Always someone else. Someone else—who has seen the ghost. Someone else—who was there when the Prime Minister told the King off."

Still keeping my eyes on Simms-Dexter's face.

"I'll introduce him to you, if you like," I said.

"Yes! And get his sworn statement that it actually happened," jeered Mandrell, who, entirely unaccustomed to contradiction, was getting angry.

"Will you? By Jove, that would be interesting," chirruped Simmy.

"I will."

"Some day," grunted the General.

"To-day," I continued, to Simms-Dexter. "He's a member of this Club. And a living proof of the

truth that a man's hair can change colour in a night."

This was too much for General Mandrell, and he intended that I should ignore him no longer.

"And I suppose you were present when it happened, Tuyler," he scoffed, addressing me personally, in his most sarcastic and offensive manner.

"I was present when it happened," I said—to Simms-Dexter.

There almost seemed to be an extra glow of light and warmth in the vast room as the General's face crimsoned.

"Good Lord!" ejaculated Johnstone, speaking for the first time. "Who's the man?"

"I'm the man," I replied, turning to Johnstone, who glanced at my prematurely grey, almost white hair, which, while I was in my early twenties, was black one day, greying the next, and quite grey a few days later.

"I say!" said Simms-Dexter contritely, "I'm awfully sorry if I have said anything that has led to . . . I mean to say . . . I didn't wish to ask any personal questions . . . or say anything that . . ."

"Not at all," I reassured him. "Entirely my own fault if . . ."

Though, in point of fact, it was the General's fault, with his insolent and ignorant assertions and contradictions on a subject concerning which I was only too well informed.

"My own fault if it were painful. But it isn't," I lied, still addressing Simms-Dexter. "I'll tell you."

And then I could have bitten out my tongue as they stared at me expectant, and Colonel Anstruther strolled over and stood listening. Unspeakable damned fool

that I was, to have let Mandrell irritate me into talking, interfering, and *exposing* myself like this.

Of course I couldn't tell them. . . . I must be going mad . . . I must get out of it, somehow.

I could see that Simms-Dexter was sorry for me. Sorry that it had happened. Probably I had gone pale and was visibly sweating.

"An illness?" he said, giving me a lead.

"No. Something I saw."

"Some ghost! What?" contributed the General.

"Something I saw, as I looked in at a window. My brother was alone in the room, in perfect health and safety . . . but he . . ." I said, my mind standing aside, as it were, and wondering what my body would do next; what I should say next.

"My brother," I repeated, and stopped in time.

Then I had to go before I disgraced myself. Before I broke down. I couldn't say another word. Fortunately, I hurried from the room and out of the Club.

And then, fully and finally, I realized the state in which my nerves must be, the direction in which I was heading; the life that I was leading, and that I was leading poor Rosanne.

Confession is good for the soul. Confession may save me.

I am ashamed, ashamed to the depths of my being, that I should be so weak. But Luke was my twin.

Incidentally I am much less ashamed of the facts that I deserted from my regiment, and that I murdered a man in cold blood.

II

ALTHOUGH Luke and I were twins, I doubt whether two people were ever less alike, in essentials, than he and I. I don't know whether we were phenomenal in that respect, for there seems to be a very widely-spread belief that twins are always as alike as two pins, both physically and mentally. We were alike physically, though easily distinguishable, but there all resemblance ended.

From early childhood, the tremendous differences between us were patent. Luke was clever, I was stupid. Luke was an artist to his finger-tips, whereas I had no artistic gift or inclination whatsoever. To him a sunset was matter for enthusiasm, joy, rapture. To me, a primrose by a river's brim, or anywhere else, was—just that.

Luke was a genuine poet ; and in the opinion of more than one eminent critic, his best poems were in the same class with those of Rupert Brooke, of Laurence Binyon, and of that tragic genius who was our comrade-in-arms, Alan Seeger, whose famous, perhaps immortal, poem, "*I have a rendezvous with Death,*" Luke saw scribbled in pencil, on the back of a letter.

Luke was a musician, and not only a first-class pianist and violinist, but a composer. He understood music, loved music, knew all about music, expressed

his beautiful soul and spirit in music. I know nothing whatsoever about it, and don't even appreciate it.

And from babyhood, Luke could talk. He could talk an angry man into good temper, and, what is more, he could talk an angry woman into a good humour. He could wheedle a bird from a tree, as they say. He could talk on any subject, at any time, in any place ; and he could change and sway the temper of a crowd. I am rather inarticulate.

And whereas Luke's repartee was brilliant, swift, keen and incisive as rapier play, I could always think of the right answer—the next day.

And, particularly and above all, Luke was *charming*. Always and to everyone he was charming ; and I never met the person who could long resist him. In what his remarkable charm lay, one could not say. He was very handsome, and of course that helped ; his manners were delightful, and his manner perfect, and that, again, was a great asset ; but that was not all, or his charm would have been superficial. True, he could and did use it consciously and openly. He deliberately set himself to please people, and inevitably they were pleased ; but there was no harm in that. Surely it is better to charm than to offend, to please than to annoy ; better to arouse approval, liking and admiration than to leave a cold surface of indifference untouched and unbroken ?

No, it was beauty of face and person, easy pleasantness of manner and manners, combined with his remarkable gifts and abilities, that gave him his charm ; and, undoubtedly, it was that perfectly indescribable elusive attribute which we call, for want of a better word, personality, that was the essence of his charm.

And it was only people of the envious and cur-

mudgeonly type who said sneeringly, as though it were a grievous fault in him, that Luke deliberately laid himself out to win popularity. Of course he did—and made the world about him a brighter and a better place by the fact of his doing so.

It was something of a blow to Father, and I think to Athene as well, when he made it perfectly clear, once and for all, that, for better or worse, for richer or poorer, he was going to leave Oxford and be a painter; that he was going to Paris to study, and that when he had learned all the French School had to teach him—in other words, when he was tired of Paris—he was going on to Rome.

I have said that he knew all about music, and the same applies to painting. What I mean is, that he knew all about the various theories of painting, and knew the history of the world's great artists and of their pictures. He had spent days in all the great art-galleries of Europe, and had read, both deeply and widely, the literature of Art.

If only he had gone to any place but Paris, if only he had gone at any other time, he would be alive now. But then Rosanne and I . . . No—this speculation on causality is childish.

As always, he had his own way, partly through the exercise of his irresistible charm, which neither Father nor Athene could ever withstand; partly by reason of his equally irresistible, because inflexible, wilfulness and determination to have his own way. He went off to Paris in his own good time, and the time, alas, was before his twentieth birthday, in the June of his first year at Oxford. I regretted his leaving us, and wanted to go with him. Luke wished to go alone, however, and Luke, as usual, did as he wished.

I think Rosanne hated his going more than anyone did, and literally mourned for him. The big house seemed positively empty, silent, deserted; and we missed him at every hour of the day. Rosanne hardly exaggerated when she said that the sun seemed to shine less brightly and less frequently now that Luke was gone; that there was less to do—and that less worth the doing—since Luke had departed; and that she had so earnestly looked forward to four whole months of the Long, with us. And she didn't exaggerate at all in saying that life was the poorer, emptier, less colourful, for his going.

It may be imagined, then, that I jumped at the opportunity of visiting Paris that July of my first Oxford long vacation, when I got a letter from him in which, half-woefully, half-humorously, he admitted that he was in what he called a spot of bother, and would be glad of my help, if only to the extent of good advice.

It was a constant source of amusement and pleasure to me that Luke always behaved as though I were very much his senior, alluded to me as a wise old bird, described me as a very present help in time of trouble, and always turned to me in time of need. Perhaps the tremendous difference between Luke and myself was, after all, accounted for by my being his complement; my earth-bound pedestrian qualities and such few solid virtues that I might possess, supplementing his brilliance, his soaring attributes of grace and beauty, as might a pedestal of stone play its humble necessary part in supporting, sustaining and completing a lovely statue of bronze, nay, gold.

Arrived in Paris, I found that I had come none too soon; that if I could be his friend in need, I should

be a friend indeed ; for he was in a mess. With his usual impetuosity, his headlong carelessness of consequences, and his undiscerning eye for worth—that went so strangely with his unerring eye for beauty—he had become deeply and unfortunately entangled with a most dangerous undesirable woman.

I had gathered from his letters that he was conscientiously and unconscionably leading *la vie de bohême* ; and I had imagined, or rather hoped, that no great harm would follow that common phase of youthful folly. Mere unprofitable culture of the wild oat. Before ever he trod the pavement of the *Boul' Miche*, he had been an assiduous student of Murger and Du Maurier ; had visualized himself in *béret* and peg-topped corduroys and spacious studio embellished with the correct furnishings, inanimate and other, and therein leading the life of Loudon Dodd and Jim Pinkerton, of the Laird of Cockpen, Trilby, and Little Billee, and a dozen other heroes evoked by his over-vivid imagination from a vanished past.

That he would have a *belle amie* who was his model, his mistress and his housekeeper was inevitable, the right and proper immorality of his rôle. But that he should ever be in grievous danger of the wrong and improper morality of marriage—to a golden-haired, brazen-faced, steel-mouthed woman, older and abler than himself, I had not dreamed. Nor had he, when lightly he embarked upon his adventure with Mrs. Ogden Lemburg, wealthy, elegant, and vicious ornament of a fashionable expatriate clique. She would have been his utter ruin in every way that matters, rich as she was in everything that does not matter.

As soon as he had told me his version of the affair,

and I had seen the woman, I could also see what had happened. Carelessly Luke had turned upon her the battery of his charm ; immediately she had seen in him something new and delightful, piquantly fresh, clean, and unspoilt ; and, so far as such a woman could, she had fallen in love with him. She wanted him and meant to have him and hold him—in the bonds of an unholy matrimony.

But there is no point in wasting time over her. She merely came into our lives as the cause of my going to Paris ; for, within a week of my doing so, War broke out, Paris went mad, all bonds were broken, all values changed, and an even more imperious mistress took him from her—*Madame la République*—and made for him his “ rendezvous with Death.”

In this universal madness none went madder than the circle that revolved round Luke ; French, American, Russian, Belgian, Spanish, Danish, Swedish, Italian and English. Inspired and led by the Spirit of Paris, all the artists were instantly more anti-German than the French ; more patriotic, more Francophile than the Parisians themselves.

And, while French eyes but looked hopefully upon the Americans, French tongues assailed the English. What would England do ? And at the top of his golden voice Luke told them. With all the assurance and persuasion of his natural gift of oratory, he assured and re-assured them. And as his bosom friend, René Barbey d'Aurillac cried aloud, with tears of emotion and alcohol streaming down his face, his *cher ami*, the Apostle Luke, would set England the example.

He did. I don't think Luke slept during those days of August, when France was at war with Germany and England was not. One of the many pictures that

will never fade from my mind is Luke, on the day that France declared war, standing high above our heads, in the huge dining room of the *Coq d'Or*, the artists' restaurant in the *Boul' Miche*, one foot on his chair, the other on the table, his glass held high, calling on every Englishman, every American, every Italian, Spaniard, Swede, Dane, or Dutchman present, to fight for France, for Freedom, and for Faith; for Honour, Truth, Beauty and all things that were worth fighting for. England would fight for these things. . . .

"With her mouth," shouted a crapulous, unpleasant-looking individual sitting apart at a distant table.

Luke broke off in mid-sentence, and, as always, when confronted with rudeness and unmannerly rebuff, looked genuinely hurt.

"England?" shouted the man. "She'll do what she has always done. Welcome and encourage war, then step aside, sell munitions and profit by . . ."

Then Luke flared up, sprang to the ground, rushed at the man and, as he rose to his feet, knocked him backward across his chair, where he lay stunned or shamming.

Returning and leaping up on to his table, he shouted, "Listen! To-morrow I shall be in a French uniform! And next week there'll be an English army in France! And next month, it will be in Germany! And . . ."

And when the din of cheering had subsided,

"Who's coming with me *now*—straight to the Recruiting Office?" he cried, and a score of voices shouted in English,

"I am! . . . We all are!" and, headed by Luke, a crowd of us surged to the door, shouting, laughing,

waving flags, bottles, hats, chairs—and quickly formed a procession that marched straight from the *Boul' Miche* to the Rue St. Dominic and the recruiting Office of the French Foreign Legion.

III

I HAVEN'T the slightest intention of adding another to the plethora of stories of the War, nor do I wish to write an account of Life in the French Foreign Legion, save in so far as is necessary to give a clear understanding of what happened to Luke, of what Luke did, and of the events that led to his doing it.

At the Recruiting Office, we were warmly received, generously praised, and coldly requested to sleep on it ; and, if we were of the same mind in the morning, to come again, when, provided we passed the medical examination, we should be enrolled as soldiers of France.

Outside the stuffy little *Bureau de R  crutement*, Luke harangued us in English, for the majority of us were Britons and Americans, and again in French, for the benefit of the others who, among them, represented Russia, Italy, Spain, Holland, Belgium, Denmark, Sweden and, if I remember rightly, Greece and Rumania—bidding us be here, to a man, at eight in the morning ; urging us to count ourselves, that we should know if any of us were missing ; and generally endeavouring to keep our hot enthusiasm at fever-pitch.

We counted ourselves, made a different total every time, and swore that nothing but death should keep us from returning on the morrow.

I think there were very few defections ; and no one failed to pass the somewhat perfunctory medical examination, and be declared *bon pour le service*.

It was very simple, that step which changed us from free and independent civilians into bond-slave soldiers of France. I should think there were a dozen Englishmen, and a score of Americans, who enlisted that day, and at least as many of assorted nationalities. They were splendid specimens and, among the Americans particularly, were men who attained distinction before America entered the War, won decorations and commissions, or obtained a transfer to the Flying Corps and wrote their names large on the blood-stained glorious Roll of Honour of those early days of aviation.

Kniffin Yates Rockwell made flying history, became an ace of the ever-glorious Lafayette Squadron, brought down numerous German planes and, when killed fighting, was buried with all the pomp and circumstance of a French public military funeral.

James W. Condon, after a career of distinction and decoration, became a gunner officer ; Bert Hall went to the Flying Corps, won the highest distinctions, and survived the War. But very few others did so.

Like Alan Seeger, the poet, they died for France and Freedom, among them, Russell Kelly, Kenneth Weeks, Dennis Dowd, Jules Harris, Homer H. Conklin, and many others whom I did not know so well, and whose names I have forgotten.

They died, but Luke and I survived, alas. . . .

Each of us having given his name, or *nom de guerre* ; age, rightly or wrongly, for we were supposed to be over eighteen ; nationality ; height and weight ; we signed a document, received a stamped form, and were told to be at the Gare de Lyons on the morrow, catch

the Lyons train, and report at the Infantry Barracks there.

The first fight of our career in the French Foreign Legion took place on the railway-platform, when we literally fought our way into the train in which there was already standing-room only, and a score of men in each compartment intended to hold six. I know that Luke and I stood face to face from Paris to Lyons, almost without moving; and that, by the time we arrived, Luke was so white that I thought he would faint. Had he done so, it would have been impossible for him to fall. However, release from that awful heat and pressure, and a few deep draughts of fresh air, put him right, and by the time we reached the Barracks, he was himself again, brimful of eagerness, and the acknowledged leader of the English party.

It was delightful to see how popular he was, and how his wonderful charm gave him a kind of ascendancy over, and natural leadership of, our group; and I was very interested and pleased to see that most of the Americans obviously approved and liked him.

So numerous were the new impressions and so swiftly they now came, that my mind soon ceased to be receptive. Everything was so unfamiliar, so strange, and the change was so sudden and subversive, that one's senses became dulled, the result being that I have blurred recollections, and no very clear memory, of the details of our first experiences of the French Army. Yesterday, a quiet and ordinary English civilian; to-day, a soldier of France, a member of the famous French Foreign Legion.

But I do remember that Luke and I were filled high with the spirit of sacrifice, and with a burning desire

to excel as soldiers, to get to the Front, and to strike our blow for Right against Might, for Freedom against Oppression. Consequently, when directed from the Barracks to a building that, up to yesterday, had been a Girls' School, we were delighted to lie down to sleep, fully dressed, on straw spread over the bare floor ; to spring up at five the next morning, and be the first to answer a Staff-Sergeant's bawl for *deux hommes de bonne volonté*. Two men of good will ! There existed no men of better will than Luke and I ; but I can see his face now as, with a grin, the Sergeant directed us to seize each a mop and a bucket, and set us to work to swab the muddy floor of his office.

Thereafter our *volonté* was no less *bonne*, but we did not obtrude it.

Contrary to what I had, for some reason, expected, I found that we volunteers for the Legion were formed into national groups, so that there were complete English and American sections, a Russian and a Belgian, and that wherever men of countries less well represented wished to serve together, they could do so. From the very first, I had had a great fear that I might be separated from Luke ; and had made up my mind that, cost what it might, in money for bribery and corruption, or in punishment for deserting my own *escouade* and joining Luke's, I would prevent this.

Our English group contained men from all walks of life, though a considerable proportion of them were artists and art-students, the others including clerks, waiters, teachers, shop-assistants, jockeys and stable-boys, and domestic servants thrown out of employment by the mobilization, and one or two nondescript down-and-outs.

The Americans seemed much more homogeneous, a

very united band, fine physical specimens, excellent fellows, and magnificent material.

Whatever the Legion may have worn later, it wore the famous old uniform in those early days of 1914; the long heavy blue overcoat, buttoned back to give freedom to the legs; the distinctive baggy red trousers; red *képi*; patent-leather puttees, and strong heavy *brodequins* with a half-inch sole which had one hundred and sixty-two hob-nails in it. Over the overcoat, we wore the wide blue Legion sash, some twenty feet in length, kept in place by a broad leather belt with heavy brass buckle. We were armed with the eight-shot magazine Lebel rifle, and a very long grooved bayonet. Later, the brilliant red trousers being such a conspicuous target, blue overalls were issued, to hide them, as well as a blue cover for the scarlet *képi*.

Luke wore this old-fashioned and romantic-looking uniform with an air, and was not happy until, by repeated exchanges, he had one of which each part fitted him excellently. Had there been time, I have no doubt he would have visited the best Lyons tailor, and either had one made of superior cloth, or that which was issued to him altered until it fitted to perfection.

Scarcely were we equipped, accoutred and armed when, without any drill or training, we were told that we should parade at *réveille* next morning, to entrain for Toulouse, where intensive training would turn us from awkward-squad recruits into real *légionnaires*.

I looked forward with great interest to seeing how the French military authorities would set about this, and how Luke would stand the rigours of the special intensive training. This was bound to be something pretty fierce, inasmuch as there was hardly a man

among us who had done a day's soldiering, and the need for us at the Front was imperative.

On the other hand, no drill-instructors were ever presented with better material, or with a body of men of finer spirit and greater keenness.

I was thrilled when I learned that the French War Office authorities—who have nothing much to learn on the subject of military theory or practice—were going to mix five hundred of us volunteer recruits with a thousand trained and experienced regulars of the Foreign Legion who were being brought from Africa.

After four endless days and nights in a cattle-truck, all the hardships of which Luke stood very well, we reached Toulouse and marched to the Infantry Barracks. Here, a number of dug-out *sous-officiers* and elderly officers of the Reserve began our training, taught us our squad-drill, how to make our *paquetage*, do our polishing, and handle our weapons. A considerable part of the remainder of each day was devoted to route-marching, the distances being increased systematically and our loads gradually made heavier.

In a fortnight, we were doing our thirty kilometres a day, carrying the hundred-pound equipment of the 19th African Army Corps.

Luke, still enthusiastically keen, still enjoying life, still full of the romance of being a knight-errant soldier, stood the work, the drill and the marching extremely well. He was quite happy; he was immensely popular; and he was impatiently anxious to get to the Front and join in the fighting.

I think that that period was one of the happiest of his life. He was fully occupied from morning till

night, and was thoroughly pleased with himself and everything else. In his uniform he looked handsomer than ever; and was fuller even than usual of high spirits, good humour, and *joie de vivre*, partly owing to the marvellous novelty of the life, and partly to the fact that, owing to the marching, physical-training exercises and the hard work, he was in perfect condition.

§ 2

And one morning, when we had been there long enough to begin to feel our feet and to look something like soldiers, there marched through the gates and on to the barrack-square, a Battalion of the French Foreign Legion—the *anciens*, real fighting-men, perhaps the best-trained and finest soldiers in the world, bronzed, war-hardened, bearded troops who, for years, had been living in a state of constant active service against the Arabs of Algeria, the Sahara, and Morocco.

I glanced at Luke as I stood watching them march in. His eyes were shining, his whole face alight, as he gazed his fill, breathing the Spirit of Romance. Here was something strange, wonderful, anachronistic. And it was indeed a marvellous Battalion, not only interesting as a military unit, but because it was composed of men, every one of whom had a story. I was stirred as I looked at their lean hard faces, and realized how unique a thing it was; what an incredible collection of men, this Legion of Mercenaries, representative of every country in the world, and of every class and creed and social stratum of that country.

Again I feared that I might be separated from Luke when the fifteen hundred were formed into Sections of sixty, and possibly drafted to different parts of the

Front. But we Volunteers were allowed to remain in national Companies, these being diluted, however, by twice the number of trained regulars of the Legion. And amazing men these were ; true soldiers, in that they were soldiers and nothing else ; men moulded, welded, stamped and sealed to the military pattern ; men from whom intelligence, thought, reason, nationality, individuality, originality and all other distinctive attributes had been hammered and excised, that Obedience might take their place and be the soldier's sole mental content.

Obedience their first law—and last. Theirs not to reason why, nor to reason at all, but blindly to obey ; so that, supplementing their own indomitable personal courage, there should be that infallible guarantee of unit-courage which is called Discipline.

And from the moment that the thousand trained war-hardened *légionnaires* entered the Barracks, we five hundred Volunteers were absorbed into the body of them, incorporated, became *légionnaires* ourselves, and were treated exactly as they were.

IV

AS a rule, Luke and I had hitherto agreed in the matter of liking and disliking people. Almost invariably, if I admired a man or a woman, Luke admired him, or her, equally well; and on the rare occasions when I met somebody whom I heartily disliked, Luke was pretty sure to dislike that person, and for the same reason.

But the man whom Luke introduced to me as *el Señor Don Caballero Yrotavál y Rewes*, and whom he always called Yrotavál, was an exception to this excellent rule, and perhaps that made me dislike him the more.

I wonder if it is possible that I was jealous of the fellow? I hardly think so; but then, of course, I don't wish to think so, and we are wonderful self-deceivers. It is quite probable that I disliked the man himself, for I can truthfully say that I did not take to him at first sight, and had Luke not been there, he was the last man in our *escouade* of whom I should have made a friend.

Either Fate or his own design gave this Yrotavál, as we always called him, the bed next to my brother's; and from the first, he fastened upon Luke and established himself as his *copain*. Luke's charm and perennial attractiveness again, of course. But I doubt whether I did Señor Yrotavál grievous wrong

in deciding that Luke's money had more than a little to do with it. These old soldiers from Africa were a thousand minds with but a single thought—wine; and Yrotavál was no exception. Wine was his and their obsession, drunkenness their besetting sin; and for wine they would do anything, steal and sell anything, including their kit and even their hard-earned medals and decorations.

Almost all the Volunteers had private means, if only to the extent of a few pounds, and very many of them had incomes which, in the eyes of the *légionnaires*, were large, indeed enormous, by their narrow standards. A recruit and his money are soon parted—especially when the recruit's comrades are *légionnaires*. In the view of these halfpenny heroes, with their *sou* a day, Luke and I were millionaires, and this Yrotavál promptly appointed Luke as his own private and particular Macenas.

Curious that this little Spaniard who marched into the Infantry Barracks at Toulouse on that August day of 1914 should have affected and influenced Luke's life and mine so tremendously; more even, perhaps, than did Athene, our parents, or even Rosanne herself.

I cannot remember the details of my first meeting with him, but I gradually became aware that Luke was making a new friend; an extremely useful one, who gave him invaluable help with his *astiquage* and *paquetage*, cleaned his boots, polished his buttons, did his washing, gave him invaluable tips, showed him the ropes; taught him how to avoid trouble and how to escape punishment; and generally constituted himself his guide and mentor. He was, of course, invaluable, and the money that Luke paid him for services rendered was undoubtedly a magnificent investment.

I gradually became aware, also, that we two were becoming three ; and, quite early, I realized the truth of the adage that two are company and three none. However, as Luke said, he was so extraordinarily useful that it would not only have been ungracious, but foolish, to choke him off.

Whenever I returned from a fatigue or guard duty, I was pretty sure to find Luke and this Yrotavál together, as thick as thieves, Luke usually sitting on his bed, roaring with laughter at his new friend's obscenely foul but very amusing conversation, while the latter did the spit-and-polish work for both of them.

And extremely amusing he assuredly was, partly by reason of the fact that he had a very pretty wit, was blessed with a tremendous sense of humour, and possessed an inexhaustible fund of Rabelaisian stories ; partly by reason of the fact that though a Spaniard, a Catalan born and bred in Barcelona, he had migrated to America and lived sufficiently long in New York to have acquired a perfect East Side accent and dialect of English. He had also sojourned in Soho and White-chapel, and learnt the Cockney of the East End of London.

To hear him talk in Legion French interlarded with Catalan, and then suddenly break into the language of the Bowery or Limehouse, was really very funny. It was more so, perhaps, when he would emit a flowing torrent of liquid sibilant Spanish, sonorous and fine-sounding, and then translate it into the most abominable English and American slang.

In appearance, he was a typical Catalan Spaniard, swarthy and leather-faced, with more than a suggestion of a far-back Hispano-Moorish ancestry. He wore

his black hair *en brosse* and was clean-shaven, save for bull-fighter side-whiskers ; his mouth was an almost lipless straight gash ; his eyes, under heavy black brows, were beady, bright and hard, and extremely shifty. Though not big, he was lithe, compact, and immensely strong, wonderfully dapper, quick and deft, especially with his hands, which he never restrained from picking and stealing, and had most assiduously and successfully trained in the use of the knife. This was his favourite weapon and he could also throw it with the speed, accuracy and effect of a pistol-bullet.

As to his antecedents, with varying accounts of which he favoured us from time to time, when under the influence of his favourite drink (a mixture of *vin blanc* and absinthe), he had followed the distinctive Barcelona profession of revolutionist, and had also been either a policeman or a police-agent ; probably the latter—a spy, informer or *agent provocateur*. I doubt whether I do him an injustice in believing that, while a youth earning his living at the Docks or in a factory, he had become a Communist, Syndicalist, or Anarchist, had joined in some murderous plot and then betrayed it to the police ; that thereafter turning King's Evidence, he had worked with and for the Police against his former associates and other criminal users of dynamite and the assassin's bullet and bomb.

Certainly, when drunk and reminiscently maudlin, he would, on one occasion, tell us how, even in the Legion, his life was not safe from vengeful Anarchists ; and on another, how, even here and now, he was in danger of extradition at the instance of the Spanish Police.

On his own showing, he had double-crossed both sides ; and one gathered that he had endeavoured to

placate his former Anarchist comrades by warning them of projected police-raids upon their meeting-places, or of intended arrests of terrorists against whom the Police had obtained evidence.

On one occasion he would tell how, to escape the Police, he had fled to America ; on another, of how, to evade the vengeance of the international Anarchist gang whom he had betrayed, he had fled thence to London, and later to France and joined the Foreign Legion for safety. When sober, he was secretive and completely silent as to his past ; but I imagine that when he was drunk and garrulous, it was a case of *in vino veritas*, and that he spoke the truth. Personally, I have no doubt that the same applied to his accounts of his doings in New York, where by his own version he had earned a precarious and dangerous livelihood as a member of a notorious underworld gang. In the spacious days of Prohibition, he would doubtless have been a racketeer and gunman ; and would probably have risen to wealth, fame and honour, as a beer-baron or boot-leg king. He certainly had the energy, ability, and utter absence of scruple required for success in that brisk walk of life.

I suppose that such a man as Yrotavál, with his inexhaustible fund of tales of unusual experience, his wit and humour, his ever-cheerful villainy and resource, was bound to interest anyone so romantic and imaginative as Luke, quite apart from the question of practical usefulness.

But I detested him. He was a specimen of the very worst type of *légionnaire*, and though a fine soldier and extremely courageous, there was something low and obscene and vile about him. Utterly devoid of conscience, morality and scruples, he was essentially bad

and base, his character and conduct as foul as his filthy language.

§ 2

I have introduced this Yrotavál at some length, not because he was more interesting than others of our Section, but because he was to play so unduly important and intimate a part in our lives—Luke's, Rosanne's and mine.

Far more worthy of description and record were Greude, Rassedin, Oberg, Drücke, Araña and several others of our *escouade*.

To my mind, Greude was the most interesting *ancien* of them all, if not of the whole French Foreign Legion, inasmuch as he was a Jew, and, according to all accounts, the only Jew who ever joined *la Légion Étrangère*. Whether this is so, I don't know, but it seems quite probable; for the Jew is not a born soldier, though he can fight as well as anybody when put to it, and he naturally has too much ability, resource and financial flair to sell his services at the rate of a *sou* a day. Usually speaking, he is too practical and too sensible to turn to mercenary soldiering for a living. He is not a romantic, he is not a swashbuckler, he is not a criminal, and he is not a *légionnaire*.

Why Greude enlisted in the Legion, I don't know. It was not because he wished to fight the Germans—although he hated them savagely—for he enlisted some years before the War. He was one of the nicest men I ever met, in the Legion or out, the very antithesis of Yrotavál in every way, and I could not understand why Luke did not infinitely prefer him to the Catalan. One

would have expected him and Greude to discover so much more in common, for the Jew had not only a very fine and well-stored mind, but was of definitely artistic temperament, and was fond both of music and of poetry. Whether he had any practical gift and ability as a poet or musician I don't know, but he was a very interesting and obviously competent critic. I often wondered what sent him to the Legion, and also what was at the root of his fanatical hatred of the Germans, and came to the conclusion that the same thing was the cause of both phenomena. He must have been badly treated in Germany, probably on racial grounds. It would not have surprised me to learn that he had been an officer in the German army, and had been persecuted by his brother officers, not only because he was a Jew, but because he was a musician, a poet, and an artist.

Added to his detestation of Germans was a natural loathing—a burning hatred, indeed—of oppression. I suppose that again was racial. Anyhow, the one thing he longed to do was to get to the Front, to get to grips with the enemy, who evidently stood to him for the Enemy of Freedom. He told me that the outbreak of war had delighted him; that he was happier now than he had ever been; and that nothing would give him greater pleasure than to die fighting for the defence of Freedom and the rights of small nations. He longed to do this. His wish was granted.

Greude spoke English and French as fluently and correctly as he did his native German. He was one of the few men to whom one could talk on other subjects than wine, women, war and wickedness (particularly the wickedness of *sous-officiers* and the tobacco ration), and, as I say, it surprised me greatly that he and Luke

did not become *copains*. But I suppose this was foolish of me, for there is nothing more incomprehensible and unpredictable than the bases of friendship and the grounds of compatibility. Are we not given constant cause to marvel at the extraordinary people whom people marry? And the same with friendships between those of the same sex.

Anyhow, there it was. Greude, who should have been attracted to Luke, preferred me. Yrotavál amused and interested Luke, and Greude did not. Fate. Our hapless and evil fate. It was written on our foreheads.

Another man whom I liked very much was a Belgian who called himself Rassedin. Although a twice re-enlisted soldier of nearly fifteen years' service, who had earned and won the possibly dubious encomium of *bon camarade et bon légionnaire*, with its implications of boon-companionship and artful old-soldierness, he was, by nature, a quiet and gentle creature who, while taking part in every barrack-room rag and every manifestation of drunken hilarity and cheerful villainy, did so with a sort of mechanical conscientiousness. I believe he thoroughly disliked getting drunk, getting into trouble, and being involved in rows, riots and ruffianism, for, whatever his occasional conduct, he had an essentially orderly and disciplined mind.

I feel pretty sure that he had been an officer in the Belgian Army. If so, he must have been a good one and taken part in the life of the Officers' Mess as faithfully as he did now in that of the Legion barrack-room. He was kindly, dependable and helpful. Like Greude, he was a man with whom one could talk, and I liked him both for himself and for his very obvious admiration for Luke.

The [redacted] he did not seem to share this, not only surprised me very much, but was something of a barrier between the Jew and me. I wondered if it were possible that he and Luke were too much alike, too much of the same grade, so to speak, and that each of them found the other a far more interesting and amusing than the other reason of the fact that opposites attract.

The Swede, was another likeable member of our *escouade*, because of his sunny temperament and his special cleanness of mind and body, and beauty of person. It amazed me that this man should be an officer in the Foreign Legion. I could, of course, have understood his joining to fight for the Cause; but that he should have enlisted in time of peace, and deliberately buried himself in a regiment of mercenary soldiers, was difficult to understand. But here I, not for the first or last time, talk like a fool; for, later, I did the very same thing myself, and Oberg no doubt had the same good, or better, reason for enlisting in the French Foreign Legion. He was one of the most unfailingly cheerful men I ever met. However short other forms of nourishment might be, he always and everywhere contrived to find food for laughter, and inasmuch as his laughter was infectious, he was an invaluable member of our little group.

He, too, was greatly attracted by Luke, and became very fond of him. If only Luke could have reciprocated and made a real friend of him instead of Yrotavál whose interested sycophant toadying he mistook for genuine admiration and affection, our lives would have been different.

Another member of our *escouade* of whom we saw a great deal was El Araña,¹ a poor pitiable creature

¹ The Spider.

low in the human scale as to be a parasite. Yrotavál. He was a pocket Hercules, who, in spite of his enormous physical strength and complete absence of intellect, had a curious nervous affliction that impelled him for ever plucking non-existent cobwebs from his eyes.

This was painful to watch, and rather galling to his own nerves. When Luke, irritated beyond endurance, snapped,

"What the Hell are you doing? What the Hell is the matter with you?" he would merely reply, "Spiders!" and continue with his ceaseless effort to free himself from the horrible incubus. Once asleep, eating, at drill, or cleaning his accoutrements, did his hands relax from this perpetual motion of cleansing. I suppose the psycho-analyst of the future could explain it, and possibly cure it. A big Prussian Guardsman did so, eventually, with a bayonet, the bayonet being the German's reward and fee.

Besides being Yrotavál's shadow, butt and lackey, Araña was the *escouade's* general factotum, since he was only too pleased to receive so much notice as a request or order, to clean one's boots. For quite a long time I thought he was dumb. It is instructive to note that this brainless sub-human creature was an entirely satisfactory *légionnaire*, and this statement is a cogent and pertinent comment upon noble and ennobling War.

Poor Araña. I don't think he ever lifted his eyes to the height of Luke's stature, Yrotavál being a sufficiently god-like superior for his worship. He was a complete animal, his sole mental satisfaction a constant receipt of a contemptuous kind word and obscene jest from his adored Yrotavál; and the only taste of physical pleasure that his coarse palate ever savoured that of *pinard* and *scafarlati* *bes*.

This last, incidentally, was an incredibly foul and poisonous form of tobacco, by far the worst of even French Government military ration-issues, which is saying something. To the unfortunate *ancien* for whom tobacco was far more of a necessity than a luxury, *Madame la République* issued weekly a small packet of stems ; stalks ; roots ; and the stringy tissue of the largest, worst and cheapest leaves, of the tobacco (or some other) plant. It was practically unsmokeable, not only by reason of its villainous quality, but because of the nature of its form, which rendered cigarette-making impossible. Some of those whose mouths and stomachs were strong enough endeavoured to smoke it in a pipe—and this even before the invention of gas-masks. Fortunately, there was more fire than smoke when a match was applied to *scafarlati des troupes*, or there must have been casualties among the unseasoned troops.

Yes, a queer collection, our *escouade*. The handsome liquid-eyed Jew, with his artistic fingers and sensitive face ; the quiet soldierly Belgian, resignedly cheerful *gentilhomme manqué* ; the perennially joyous laughing Swede, happy-go-lucky and careless, always merry and bright ; the obscene and wicked little Catalan, tricky and cunning, infinitely amusing and the best of bad company ; the dumb oaf, el Araña, without a thought in his mind or a nerve in his body, yet cursed with the worst nervous affliction imaginable.

There were others, of course : Bergmann, the admirable Swiss ; Dolgorousky, the enormous yet childishly temperamental Russian ; Barnefeld, the ever-placid stolid Dutchman ; Ericsson, the fine athletic melancholy Dane whom Luke called Hamlet ; Drücke, the elderly Prussian, who, after seventeen

years in the Legion, denied that he had any country at all, and refused to be left behind at the dépôt at Sidi-bel-Abbès when other Germans in the Legion were given the option of doing so. Incidentally, one could not feel that Drücke behaved as a traitor and a renegade in fighting against Germany, inasmuch as he was completely sincere in holding the faith expressed and declared in the Song of the Legion :

*"Soldats de la Légion
De la Légion Étrangère,
N'ayant pas de nation,
La France est votre Mère."*

So long had he served in the Legion, so completely was he imbued with its spirit, that its *caserne* was his hearth and home, France was his mother, and her enemies, German or other, were Drücke's enemies. He was probably fortunate in being killed and not taken prisoner by his original compatriots.

A queer collection indeed, our *escouade*, chiefly English (good average ordinary Englishmen, who became *bons camarades et bons légionnaires*, but remained "*single men in Barracks, uncommonly like you*"), Belgian, Russian, Swiss, Swedish, Dutch, Danish and French. . . .

V

I IMAGINE that had we Volunteers been ordinary peace-time recruits to the Legion, and gone through the ordinary dépôt routine at Sidi-bel-Abbès, we should have found things very different in very many ways. Being Volunteers who had enlisted in the Legion, not for our own ends but simply and solely to fight for France, I think that, at any rate while recruits, we were deliberately treated with leniency, and that to us, the non-commissioned officers somewhat tempered the wind of their usual acerbity. Certainly we got on with them very well, and they taught and trained us with conscientious care and great patience. According to the *anciens*, we did not know what real barrack-square rough-stuff was; and I, personally, was later to experience a far harsher discipline than that of the war-time Legion recruit.

Our Sergeant-Instructor struck me as a man who might well have been a Colonel, so admirable was his bearing, so wise and skilful his handling of the *escouades*, and so clear and knowledgeable his lectures on tactics.

Greude told me that Sergeant-Instructor Marchien had been an officer in the French Regular Army until court-martialled and cashiered, by reason of some irregularity in Mess-accounts, and that he had enlisted in the Foreign Legion as a Belgian.

I was very glad to see that he made rather a favourite

of Luke. Later I learned that he had borrowed one hundred francs from him, but I think he liked the boy for himself as well as for his money. To the Sergeant-Instructor it was, no doubt, a considerable sum, whereas to Luke, four pounds was a trifle—especially in view of the value of a Sergeant-Major's warm approval.

As a matter of fact, many non-commissioned officers "borrowed" from Volunteers who were supposed to have money. Most of the Corporals did, with the exception of our Room-Corporal Valence, of whom more anon. Money oiled the wheels in a wonderful way. One gave it to *légionnaires* who did one's cleaning and polishing, who undertook one's fatigues, and who offered themselves as substitutes for guard and other duties. To the Corporals one "lent" small sums on demand, and to Sergeants larger sums on suggestion. All very deplorable as a system and admirable as an investment.

It was amusing to see Yrotavál's indignation when he saw Luke parting with good money thus.

"Huh!" he would growl. "*Con dinero no te conoceras, sin dinero no te conoceran.*¹ Dat Coipril Bjelavitch is de woist ol' boid of de gang. You won't see dem dollars no more. You don' wanna flash your dough here, Bo. *Eh bien! Que voulez-vous? C'est La Légion.* Dey'd pinch your *abatis*² for boot-laces. Sure. *Amores, dolores y dineros, no puedan estar secretos.*³ Dose guys, dey'll skin you alive. Dey's *un abadis du raboin* of thugs. Money! Dey'll steal your teeth."

¹ *With money you will not know yourself; without it others will not know you.*

² *Giblets.*

³ *Love, grief and money cannot be concealed.*

"Oh, well, it's only a loan in a good cause," Luke would reply.

"*M'Carben Diu!* Like Hell, it's a loan. Say when you wanna lend them kinda loans, you lend 'em to me. See? I do us some good with it, and I do some good for it. I earn it. See? I bark for my supper. See? *A quien no sobra, no crie can.*¹ See?"

"Oh, shut up. You'll get all you are worth, Yrotavál," Luke would reply.

"Sure, and dat Bulgar bed-bug, Coipril Bjelavitch, ain't woith nutting at all. *M'Carben Diu!*"

"What does *M'Carben Diu* mean, Yrotavál?"

"Dat's good Catalan—which is a forbidden language in Spain! It means B'Jimminy Jees. Also it means Holy Peter's Velvet Pants. See?"

In fairness to the Sergeant-Instructor, I think he only borrowed once. I don't think any of the Sergeants made more than a second touch. If, in the case of the Corporals, the small loans were numerous, they didn't amount to very much.

One non-commissioned officer who never borrowed from either of us was this Corporal Valence. We were about sixty to a room, and in one corner of each room dwelt the Room-Corporal, a deal table segregating him and cutting his bed off from those of the common herd. Upon him, it depended, to a great extent, whether the *chambrée* was a "happy ship." If the man were a bully, a brutè and a trouble-maker, the spirit and general atmosphere of the *chambrée* could be thoroughly unpleasant. If he were weak, slack and drunken, discipline would suffer, petty tyrants and bullies among the *anciens* have their opportunity, and recruits get a bad time. If he were a strong man, competent and of

¹ He who has nothing to spare, should not keep a dog.

good will, things went well. We were very fortunate indeed in Corporal Valence, an ideal non-commissioned officer, pleasant but firm and resolute, a really conscientious soldier who knew his job, and did it thoroughly, with the minimum of friction.

Here was another man the reason for whose presence in the Legion was hard to understand ; for he, too, had enlisted in time of peace, and yet was the last man one would have expected to find serving as a mercenary soldier. Well-educated and extremely intelligent, he obviously could have gone far in a civil career. Another tragedy of a wasted life. And, sorry as I was that he should leave us, I was delighted when he was removed elsewhere, on promotion.

It's a good wind that blows nobody any ill, however, and it was a bad one for Luke, and therefore for me, that brought the Bulgarian Corporal Bjelavitch in his place. This fellow was by any standards a beast. He was an enormous, bear-like man, with a heavy, stupid face, cruel and sensual, thick-lipped, broad-nosed, low-browed and pig-eyed ; an ignorant peasant, and doubtless a criminal, who had left his country for his country's good. Yrotavál, who knew all about him, warned us to be careful.

" There's no reason why he should turn nasty, is there ? " asked Luke. " I've lent him a few francs and can lend him some more."

" Nasty ! " sneered Yrotavál. " Dat guy's sure your woist enemy when he's your best friend. See ? You watch out. And you keep close to me. See ? Anyt'ing that slob say to you, you tell me. See ? You wanna be careful an' watch your step, now. You especial, see ? "

" What on earth are you driving at ? "

" Huh ! It'll be Bjelavitch as'll do de drivin' if he picks on you. Drive you over de edge."

" Pick on me ? Why should he quarrel with me ? " asked Luke.

" *M' Carben Diu !* Who said ' quarrel ' ? I said ' pick on you. ' "

" Well, isn't that quarrelling ? "

" Shucks ! Pick on you as a *friend*, Big Boy. Dat's what I mean. Dat Bulgar's a bad guy. You don' wanna cross him. And you won't wanna please him. You wanna be careful. *Paso á paso van lejos*.¹ You stay by me."

I, not unnaturally, imagined that, with this sort of talk, Yrotavál was merely trying further to impress us with his usefulness, and to prove that not only was he valuable as a batman, but invaluable as a protector, adviser and guide among the quicksands that beset our path as *bleus* in the Legion. But I freely admit that here I did him an injustice ; for all that he said concerning the Bulgarian was true and less than the truth, so far as decent people, like most of the Volunteers, were concerned. The man was a degraded brute, and should have been a convict in a gaol of the worst kind, instead of a soldier with a position of authority in a fine Battalion. I suppose that apart from his foul habits and vices, he was a good enough war-time non-commissioned officer (which is another indictment of War, if one were needed), for he was a determined and violent driver, courageous and forceful, and was competent to the extent that he knew thoroughly well what little a Corporal needs to know.

But a change in the atmosphere of the *chambrée* was quickly noticeable, and the tone deteriorated. Bjela-

¹ *Fair and softly goes far.*

vitch took violent likes and dislikes, had great favourites and utter *bêtes noires* ; was rough and overbearing in manner, and a great bully. Punishments increased in number and severity ; and, whereas everything had gone well and smoothly when Valence was Room-Corporal, there was now friction and ill-feeling. Valence led, but Bjelavitch drove.

Nor was it very long before I understood only too clearly what Yrotavál had meant when he said that Bjelavitch would drive over the edge anyone who thwarted him. What was not, at first, so clear was the true inwardness of his hard saying that it might be worse for a young recruit if Bjelavitch picked on him rather as a friend than as an enemy.

And here Luke's handsomeness, attractiveness and charm quickly seemed likely to be his undoing, for Bjelavitch did pick upon him. He singled him out for praise and favours ; and, so far as a non-commissioned officer can, he endeavoured to make a *copain* of him, and ordered Luke's bed to be moved next to his own. At first, Luke was amused, jokingly referred to him as his Friend at Court, and promised to extend his patronage to me. This was all very well, so long as being the Corporal's favourite ensured that he got the minimum of fatigues and the maximum of protection from unjust punishment or bullying. But it was not so amusing when Bjelavitch developed the habit of addressing him as "*Chérie*," "*Ma petite*," and "*Lulu*," and began to manœuvre to get Luke alone ; began to be affectionately demonstrative in a wholly un-English way ; to put his arm about his neck and to pat his face.

The first time this happened, Luke thought it nearly as funny as it was objectionable, and imagined that

the great bear-like creature, a head taller than himself, was merely exhibiting the normal manners and customs of his Bulgarian breed.

But it did not stop at that, and I came into the *chambrée* from guard, one day, to find Luke speechless with fury, and Yrotavál endeavouring to soothe him with sound worldly advice. Bjelavitch, finding Luke alone in the room, had suddenly flung his great arms about him, hugged him to his enormous breast and kissed him upon both cheeks, as though he had been the pretty girl whom Bjelavitch professed to imagine him.

"My God!" raged Luke. "If he does that again, I'll bash his face in. I'll lay him out, and . . ."

"Spend the rest of the War in gaol?" I asked. "Eight years' hard labour—if you are lucky."

"*M' Carben Diu*," growled Yrotavál, moved to righteous indignation at such injustice, or at the thought of losing his lucrative job as Luke's henchman, "I'll fix the bastard. I'm sure goin' to *abêlardiser* the *sacré soudillard*. But you got to watch your step. He allows you got to be his friend—or else he'll be your enemy."

"But surely," said I, "we can go to the Company Sergeant-Major or the *Adjudant*, and . . ."

"Fergit it!" laughed Yrotavál. "*Dios quiera!* Where do you t'ink you are. *Carramba! C'est la Légion*. You cain't go behind an N.C.O. There ain't no such place. And you cain't go over the head of one neither. He'd be the death of you, even if the Sergeant-Major or *Adjudant* would listen to you."

"But Sergeant-Major Muller is a decent chap and . . ."

"*Ca!* Listen, Big Boy. Dis is de Legion. You

complain about a Coipril to a Sergeant, and de Sergeant'll give you de maximum punishment he can, just to learn you not to undermine discipline. See? And you complain to de Sergeant-Major and he'll double it. And then to de *Adjutant* and he'll double dat. And then to de Captain and he'll give you all he's got. And if it gets as far as de Colonel, you'll go before a *conseil de guerre*—and then to prison fer a trouble-making menace to discipline. But it wouldn't get to no Colonel. Potted priests! The N.C.O.'s can deal with any *légionnaire* dat wants to make trouble for one of them. Besides, suppose de Sergeant-Major was a friend of yours because you 'lent' him a 'wad of francs, and he listens to your tale in private, what then? Skippin' Serpents! If he's feelin' good, he'll tell you—in private—to go away while de goin's good, and not to be a bigger damn-fool than God made you. Good advice, too, *muerte de Dios*, because de Coipril'll get you if you squeal. Get you good an' plenty, every time; get you every day; get you cells—and then some—until you'll soon only be out of cells just long enough to get another sentence. See?"

The situation developed quickly, horribly, and—dangerously. I had a long talk with Greude, who knew the Legion and Corporal Bjelavitch as well as Yrotavál did; and he could only advise the utmost circumspection, wariness and restraint.

"If your brother flares up, well, he'll burn himself, or rather Bjelavitch will. If he antagonizes Bjelavitch, his life will be a hell. If he strikes him, it will be a death-blow—his own."

"But is there no *justice* in . . . ?"

"Justice! My dear Tuyler! What is that? We

know nothing of it here. Never heard of it. There's *discipline*. And discipline means that the non-commissioned officer can do no wrong, and the *simple* *soldat* can do nothing right, if the N.C.O. says so."

"But damn it all, man, suppose a non-commissioned officer robbed him, struck him or . . ."

"Well, that wouldn't be discipline, so he mustn't do it. There is no God but Discipline, and the N.C.O. is his Prophet."

"Look, Greude, what would *you* do?" I asked.

"I? To Bjelavitch? Kill him, probably. Kill him. Drive my bayonet through his throat."

"Discipline?" I sneered.

"No. But we'd both go where there is Justice. Yes—I'd kill him."

"That's hardly helpful, Greude. I don't want my brother shot for killing his superior. Can't you . . . can't we . . . can't I do . . .?"

"No. But we shall be off to the Front before long. Your brother must carry on somehow, till then."

"But Bjelavitch will go the Front with us."

"Yes, my dear chap. But he won't last there, will he? Not if we don't want him to."

"What d'you mean?"

"Mean? What d'you suppose? When a man like Bjelavitch asks for it, he gets it, doesn't he? At the Front, your brother can shoot Bjelavitch in the back, if he persecutes him; or if you get the opportunity first, or if I . . ."

I stared at Greude in amazement. What had the Legion done to such a man as he, that he could talk like this?

"Yrotavál would do it for five *sous*," he laughed.

Rassedin came over to borrow a brush, and Greude

told him what I had been saying ; and without hesitation, Rassedin gave the same advice.

"Your brother will have to be careful till we get to the Front," he said. "Damn careful. Then we'll put that *salaud* out. There'll be lots of scores settled, when the shooting begins, besides those against the Germans."

Idle talk, I concluded. The sort of vague and foolish threats probably made in all armies against all thoroughly unpopular superiors.

And that very day, Corporal Bjelavitch was in *rappport* for escort duty to take a man to Fort St. Jean at Marseilles. He at once detailed Luke as one of the escort. The others were a burly bearded *ancien*, one Père Bossuet, a cheerful old villain who almost lived on *pinard* ; and the stunted Hercules known as The Spider.

Directly I heard the orders, I went to Bjelavitch and asked him if I could substitute for Bossuet or Araña.

He looked me up and down.

"Why do you want to go ?" he growled.

"To have some fun in Marseilles," I replied promptly.

"*Bogu !* I'll arrange for you to have some fun here," he sneered. "*Rompez* ¹ !"

Quickly I found Yrotavál, and told him to substitute for Bossuet, if he could square him and Bjelavitch.

"For Bossuet ? Sure. Dat ol' *borrachon* would do anyt'ing for wine. He'll be easy. It's Bjelavitch who'll bitch it. But I'll try. Sure.

"How much ?" he asked, shooting a sly glance at me.

"Anything in reason. Ten francs ?"

¹ *Dismiss.*

"Twenty-five for de Coipril. An' twenty-five for me."

"Damn your hide, Yrotavál. You substitute for Bossuet and look after my brother, and leave the price to me. That'll be all right—so long as my brother doesn't get into trouble with Bjelavitch."

"Okay, Boss."

I had an anxious week-end while Luke was away, and a shock when he returned.

The worst had happened.

He had had a terrible row with Bjelavitch, and, though he had not actually stabbed him, he had drawn his bayonet in self-defence; in other words, he had "threatened the life of his superior in time of war," and before witnesses.

I got hold of Yrotavál at the earliest possible moment. It was a bad business, he admitted. He had done his best, but Luke had been foolish and violent, and Bjelavitch was going to "frame" him. Luke was for it, and unless Yrotavál and Araña gave the evidence that was required, they'd be for it, too—and so forth.

I got as many of the Volunteers of our *chambrée* together as I could, and such of the *anciens* as I thought might be helpful—Greude, Rassedin, Oberg, Bergmann and Barnefeld.

The Volunteers were full of wild schemes, varying from approaching the Captain of our Company, a man whom we had scarcely seen, to threatening Bjelavitch. René Barbey d'Aurillac, who loved Luke, suggested that the whole *escouade* should invade the Company Office in a body and protest; and then that they should waylay Bjelavitch and threaten to beat him up if my brother were arrested.

The *anciens* merely laughed, and pointed out that any one—or any dozen—who lifted a finger to interfere, would merely share Luke's fate. And when asked what we could do, told us that we could do precisely nothing, and the quicker the better.

I could only wait for the blow to fall, and that evening was one of the worst of a life not unchequered with bad patches.

I felt most miserably helpless, and could only determine that I would not leave anything undone of the little that I could do in the way of bribery or threats. I had some hope that the offer of a big sum of money might do something with Bjelavitch; and very little that a faithful promise to shoot him, if anything happened to Luke, would have the slightest effect.

I sat on my bed, that night, awaiting Bjelavitch's return to the *chambrée*; and until Luke went out, leaving me to finish his *astiquage*, I was pleased, not to say surprised, at the calmness with which he went about his spit-and-polish preparations for the morrow. This he had to do for himself, as both Yrotavál and Araña were out.

It was rather he who cheered and sustained me, than I him—until with a laugh he said he must “go and see a man about a dog.” I waited, expecting the worst to happen.

I waited in vain. Corporal Bjelavitch did not return that night, or ever again.

He was murdered.

A picket, hastily sent for, found him lying in the gutter outside a low *bistro*, in a narrow slum in the sailors' quarter, with a knife in his back and through his heart.

Police enquiry totally failed to discover any kind of clue. Investigation pursued in the *chambrée* dis-

closed nothing that could have any bearing on the crime ; neither circumstantial evidence nor grounds for presumption of motive.

It seemed that the dead man had no enemies, for example.

All who were questioned bore testimony to the admirable character of the deceased, and the high regard in which he was held. His humble friends and devout admirers, *les légionnaires* Yrotavál and Araña, were possibly more emphatic than anyone on the subject of Bjelavitch's popularity and freedom from enemies. They both wept a little when speaking of their murdered Room-Corporal.

§ 2

Bjelavitch's place was taken by a very decent Frenchman, Corporal Hervé, who was far too anxious to get to the Front, and to do everything he could to increase the efficiency of the volunteers of his *escouade*, to have any time for other diversions.

Work grew harder, hours longer, and volunteer proficiency steadily greater.

And, after no more than one month of constant intensive training, a Battalion of a thousand of us was ordered to be in readiness to proceed to the Front. This fine unit consisted of five hundred regulars, all old trained war-hardened *légionnaires*, and five hundred Volunteers selected from those who had shaped best at drill, been best behaved, or had had previous military experience.

Luke and I were delighted beyond words to find ourselves included in this *Premier Bataillon de Marche*.

Poor Luke !

VI

I HAVE said nothing hitherto of letters from home. But these had been almost as numerous as they were welcome, my Father and Athene writing frequently, and Rosanne daily, to both of us.

Her first letter, in answer to mine from Lyons, telling her of our enlistment in the French Army, as soon as it was a *fait accompli*, was a curious mixture of a squeal of delight and a groan of agony; of joy and of pride in what we had done and of fear and horror as to what might be done to us. She was obviously both proud and broken-hearted, and begged me to take the greatest care of myself and Luke.

"You are so much stronger than he—in every way," she wrote. *"I expect it was you who made him join; but I'm not going to say a word against that . . . I think I shall die if England doesn't come in. But of course she will, and so you'd have gone, just the same. As it is, you will only get to the Front a little earlier, and you've set a splendid example . . . Oh, how I wish I were a man. I have written to everyone I know, and to a good many whom I hardly know, telling them what you have done, and implying that the sooner they do the same, the better! That is in the case of men. To the women to whom I write, I imply that that's what their sons and husbands will want to do, of course, and all that is*

necessary is to go over to Paris and ask the way to the Recruiting Office!

"But England will come in, and I pray that America will, too. But oh, Mark, you will be careful, won't you? And make Luke be careful, too. What an idiotic thing to write, but you know what I mean. . . ."

And much more to the same effect.

Her letters grew more cheerful, or perhaps more resigned on and after August 4th, when England declared war with Germany.

I wrote to her as frequently as I could; but apparently Luke did not, as she was constantly asking why he hadn't written; where he was now; and whether he were ill. When I reminded him that he ought to send an occasional line home, and that Rosanne was bothered about him, he replied,

"What need for both of us to write? You can give her all the news."

And I was rather angry one day when, in a wine-shop where we were rewarding Yrotavál and Araña, signifying our approval (of their services as batmen) in the usual manner, I saw Luke pull a paper from the pocket of his *vareuse*, glance at it, and light it at a gas-jet, and I knew it to be a letter in Rosanne's handwriting.

I was afterwards surprised at myself for being indignant about it, and yet it seemed to me a rotten thing to do, to use Rosanne's letter as a pipe-lighter in a Toulon wine-shop, in the presence of men like Yrotavál and Araña. Very absurd of me, of course.

As soon as I knew that we were in *rapport* for the Front, with the *Bataillon de Marche*, I wrote her a long letter, telling her that it might be the last she'd get for some time, and that she mustn't worry if she heard

The news from the Front was not too good. In fact, it was bad, and this probably accounts for the haste with which our newly formed *Bataillon de Marche* was despatched to the Front. Within a week of its formation, it was notified in Orders, one night, that the Battalion would parade for kit-inspection in the morning, and entrain in the evening for an unknown destination.

It was amazingly quick work, that five hundred civilians should have been turned into fighting soldiers, and sent into battle after a month's training; but the "dilution" system was an admirable one, and fully justified itself. For the *bleus* had quickly absorbed the spirit of the *anciens* and the training of the Instructors.

At shooting, I fear we should have been beneath the contempt of a British Army Battalion. Definitely we did not shine on the rifle-range at anything from a thousand yards down to three hundred; but as most of our shooting was done at something more like a thousand to three hundred inches, this was no great matter. The Legion could pour in point-blank magazine-fire at trench ranges as well as any troops, and could use the bayonet better than most.

So, in the highest fettle, singing at the tops of our voices, we marched out of the Infantry Barracks of Toulon, behind our *clique*, the Legion drum-and-bugle band, through loudly cheering crowds, to the station, where the usual train of "40 hommes ou 8 chevaux—*en long*" trucks awaited us.

Packed like sardines, *Standing Room Only*, once more we made our slow and weary way across France from south to north; across rural France—so unlike England—with her interminable and eternal lines of poplars, her intensively cultivated fields, her endless

straight roads, her lovely city-crowned hills, her beautiful old villages, her hideously ugly little villages and industrial towns. Ever north and east, slowly and ever slower, with frequent halts when the train disgorged all over the line, the station and the village, hungry *légionnaires* in search of food and water, the *anciens* bent on loot, the volunteers on purchase—purchase at any price, of cigarettes, bread, meat, beer, wine; the honest would-be buyers usually returning empty, sinkingly empty, the wicked *anciens* laden, heavily-laden, and anxiously willing to sell their surplus—of everything but wine. (No *ancien* has ever heard of such a thing as a surplus of wine.)

At last the train reached Camp de Mailly, where we went under canvas and slept on muddy straw.

It was here that Luke, off duty, fell in with Alan Seeger, talked with him a while and sat beside him, leaning against the station wall, and watched him as he scribbled his "Rendezvous with Death":

*"I have a rendezvous with Death
At some disputed barricade. . . .
At midnight in some flaming town
When Spring trips north again.
And I to my pledged word am true.
I shall not fail that rendezvous."*

Alan kept his rendezvous with Death.

Next day the Legion marched, and the *bleus*, toward evening, heard in earnest the "*Marchez où crevez*" exhortation from the non-commissioned officers, added to their eternal "*Grouillez-vous! Grouillez-vous! Hurry! Hurry!*"

Incidentally, I remember wondering whether that everlasting "*Grouillez!*" gave us our adjective "gruelling." It was certainly a gruelling march. More than

twenty-five miles, with a load of over a hundred pounds, and part of it across country, much of which was soft, sucking mud, horrible stuff into which the right foot sank to get purchase for the pulling-up of the left, and into which the left sank yet deeper as the right foot was slowly and painfully withdrawn like a cork from the neck of a bottle.

This march, of which the conditions grew worse as we penetrated farther through the war-shattered country-side, took us, if I remember rightly, through Verzy, Cuiry-les-Chaudards—an island of mud surrounded entirely by mud—to Fismes, and thence to the front-line trenches, where we took over the most dangerous sector, and plunged straight into the War.

As I have said, I have no intention of writing a war book, nor of describing all over again the ghastly horrors, not of bullet and bayonet and shell, but of cold, bitter cramping murderous cold ; mud ; mud that was thickly smeared on your clothing from head to foot, as butter is smeared on bread ; mud that penetrated to your flesh and clogged the pores of your skin ; mud that penetrated to your soul and made it—muddy · rain that drenched till you had not a dry shred, and all but drowned you and filled the undrained clay trenches to the height of a man's waist : noise that deafened you, shook you, shattered you, till you longed desperately for the silence of death : lice that sickened and disgusted you, made you itch and scratch all day, and awakened you at night from such sleep as intervals between bombardments allowed you : hunger, miserable griping hunger, that at dawn rendered you a sick, empty, trembling wreck, fitter for a warm hospital-bed than for desperate physical effort. And constant Death that stalked reaping, right and left : Death

whom, personally, you would have welcomed, but who stalked your brother too.

I marvelled to see how splendidly Luke stood up to it. I was proud of him, and ashamed of myself. He was a credit to his country, an example to his comrades. One had expected courage from him, naturally, but not the high physical and mental resistance that enabled him to carry on. But, of course, he was of fine physique ; he had never been ill in his life ; and was, at any rate until we went into the trenches, in the pink of condition.

Our first actual fight was when Sergeant Paggallini suddenly bawled,

" Aux armes ! Aux armes ! Load ! Rapid fire independent ! " and springing to our feet, we saw a wave of shadows swarming from the opposite trenches and bearing down upon us through the dawn mist.

" Aim low ! Aim low ! Ground level ! "

And, cool as on the rifle-range, steady as any of the veterans, Luke, beside me, aimed and fired, aimed and fired, without haste or excitement.

This Sergeant Paggallini was one of the many Corsican non-commissioned officers of the Legion. The authorities like them and promote them quickly—not because they are haloed by the Napoleonic legend, but because they are invariably hard, harsh and severe ; men of steel, which takes a fine sharp edge and point ; ruthless drivers, violent and cruel ; magnificent disciplinarians as the Legion understands discipline.

Unlike the late Corporal Bjelavitch, this fellow took a sudden and violent dislike to Luke, by reason of something in his cool and measuring look, his English aloofness and air of superiority, no doubt ; and started to make his life a burden to him as only a Legion non-

com can. His childish and petty, though violent and dangerous, persecution did not last long, for Sergeant Paggallini took an almost equally violent dislike to Yrotavál, who had a wonderful gift for veiled insolence and all the old *légionnaires*' knowledge of the tricks of their trade.

In the incredibly horrible conditions under which we were living, with the "hash-guns"—as the Americans called the kitchens-on-wheels—wrecked by gun-fire; our kitchen-orderlies, with their buckets of coffee and *soupe* shot down as they ploughed their way, slithering, through the mud; and our meagre iron rations devoured, the temper of the *légionnaires* grew increasingly nasty: and when, early one ghastly morning of rain and cold and mud and starvation, Sergeant Paggallini drew his revolver on the dilatory Yrotavál and called him a coward, a cur, stinking scum, and the bastard of a Spanish brothel, he signed his own death-warrant, forestalling the Reaper's regular agents.

That very night, Sergeant Paggallini, a brute as brave as the bravest, took out into No Man's Land a reconnoitring-patrol consisting of the six files to my right, Luke, Yrotavál, Araña, Barnefeld, Brancker and Oberg.

In an agony of anxiety, I awaited their return from their immeasurably dangerous visit to the German trench a hundred yards away, doubly dangerous by reason of the probability of their being seen by the light of a Very star and machine-gunned by the vigilant Germans, and of being fired upon by our own sentries, as they crawled back to our line. They would be all right if they survived to come back to their point of departure; but if, as was most probable, they lost direction in the dark, and approached a

different trench section, they were almost certain to be fired upon by our own sentries.

During the hour or two that they were gone, hardly a shot was fired, thank God : and, by great skill and coolness, or greater good luck, the patrol returned to the very spot whence it had set forth.

But not the whole of it. Sergeant Paggallini was missing. And the first thing that Yrotavál did on regaining the trench was to clean his rifle. The others had not fired theirs.

“ So I am a ‘ *fiis de gadoue de bordel Espagnol*,’ am I, Señor Paggallini ? ” I heard him say as he drew his pull-through from the muzzle of his gun. “ And a ‘ *sale gallitrac*,’ eh ? And you’d pull your gun on me, eh ? And you’ve gone an’ missed de boat ! . . . Well, well, now ! Ain’t that just too bad,” and grinning amiably he winked at Luke.

Although Luke said nothing to me on the subject of Sergeant Paggallini’s failure to return, he obviously knew that we should not be troubled by him again.

VII

AS was inevitable in the circumstances, dysentery broke out, and Luke got it badly.

Happily, the remnant skeleton of the Battalion was relieved, after a month of the most appalling existence that human beings ever endured and survived, before he collapsed. With the invaluable help of the powerful and untiring Araña, I managed to get Luke back to the scene of our rest-billets—God save the mark—which were merely second-line trenches and dug-outs, where our restful recuperation consisted in digging from morning till night ; deepening and draining the communication trenches ; constructing new more-or-less bomb-proof dug-outs ; felling, cutting and carrying great baulks of timber ; and battling with barbed wire, which to the tired soldier is apt to seem a more devilish foe than the human enemy himself.

Soon typhus or typhoid fever appeared among us, as though we had not sudden Death among us in forms sufficiently horrible and numerous. Luke in his weakness took it at once and was soon too weak to move. Araña, Yrotavál, big Ouspenski and I, lifted him from his bed of mud and carried him up into the woods where we were slaving as lumberjacks. There we constructed an almost rain-proof little shack, in which we laid him and gave him such nursing as was possible between our spells of hard labour.

It was heart-warming, touching, to see the generosity with which survivors of our *escouade* gave of their scanty *soupe*, wine, coffee, and—more valuable—of their brief aching leisure, to take turns in nursing him, for he was very ill indeed. I thought he was going to die, and could I have laid hands on His Most Excellent Imperial Majesty the All-highest, he'd have died too, for my heart seethed with murderous hate of those who had caused this war.

So weak was Luke, that when the order came for the reinforced Battalion to return to the trenches, he couldn't get to his feet, and I was faced with the alternative of abandoning him to starve to death there in the sodden dripping woods, or absenting myself from duty and staying with him.

I stayed.

You may wonder why I couldn't have got him carried back to our alleged rest-billets. I could—and have left him to die there in the mud and water of a trench or a dug-out, not only neglected but trampled underfoot by the almost equally ill, weary, and enfeebled wretches of the next Battalion that staggered back to their second-line trenches for their turn to "rest."

Doctors? Casualty clearing-stations? There were none at that time and place; and only the severely wounded, who might yet be patched up again, were painfully and slowly evacuated on stretchers. Few of these ever reached shelter, bed and medical care.

Things were bad enough in those early days for French troops of the Line. For the French Foreign Legion they were infinitely worse, *Madame la République* being then, as ever, extremely prodigal of the lives of the *légionnaires* whom she could get so cheaply and whom she regarded more cheaply still.

So—right or wrong, criminal dereliction of duty or fulfilment of my obvious and natural duty to my dying brother—I stayed, nursed him, and fed him with such food as I could scrounge, and he could swallow. I made a sort of gravy with scraps of bully-beef and paving-stone biscuit. I bought or stole an occasional egg and mug of milk. I travelled long distances, furtively and by night, and contrived, in the words of Thomas Atkins, “to find, win or wangle,” at farm, *estaminet*, camp and bivouac, enough of the right sort of food to keep him alive.

From our own rest-billets I kept away until I thought our Battalion would have returned to them ; but, on cautiously reconnoitring, I found, to my dismay, that they were occupied by a Line Battalion. This was bad. Were I caught and questioned by the Military Police, I stood an excellent chance of being arrested as a deserter, tried by drum-head court-martial, and shot at dawn. The French have a very short way with deserters or suspected spies, their motto being, Better shoot the wrong man than no man at all—*pour encourager les autres*. A plea that I was nursing my dying brother would have earned a sarcastic bitter smile and a death-sentence.

Nor, in the event of Luke’s dying, could I march up to the front trenches and, with a broad grin and a wag of my tail, say, like a Lancashire comedian, “Ah’ve coom.”

With one exception this fortnight was, I think, the worst period of my life, for I touched the very nadir of wretchedness. It seemed impossible that Luke could recover ; I was a deserter from my regiment ; my comrades were fighting and dying, while I lurked in ignominious safety ; the rain poured night and day

incessantly ; it was bitterly cold, with the penetrating deadly rawness of a French November ; and we were almost starving.

When not scavenging and reconnoitring for food, I sat leaning against a tree-trunk, sunk in the lowest depths of depression and, having covered Luke's shivering body with my overcoat, unable to do anything further for his comfort. It was impossible to keep a fire of wet wood alight in that pouring rain ; impossible to keep him dry, much less warm.

From time to time, I must have fallen into a kind of daze or a state of coma ; and I remember a sort of waking nightmare in which I thought I was a rotten wooden peg being driven into the sodden clay of that charnel-place by two giants wielding sledge-hammers, one of which bore as in a cartoon, the legend, "*You are a deserter,*" and the other, "*Luke is dying of typhoid fever.*"

These were the two thoughts that hammered on my brain when I was awake, and they pursued me in what was but a substitute for sleep.

I suppose I grew light-headed toward the end of this almost sleepless and foodless vigil (for what little food I could get was barely sufficient for Luke), for I occasionally seemed aware of the presence of a third person, a woman. It was Rosanne.

I must, of course, have dozed sometimes, for I also dreamed of her : and, when fully awake, I found myself thinking of her frequently, and then, toward the end, almost continuously. Suddenly I realized that, next to Luke's recovery, what I wanted most was to see Rosanne again. Or, to be strictly accurate, perhaps I should say that what I wanted most in the world was to see Luke restored to health ; that what I wanted

next was to find myself back in my *escouade* without being court-martialled as the deserter that I was ; and that thirdly, more than anything else, I wanted to see Rosanne ; to speak to her ; to have her sitting beside me in the deep old settee in front of the log fire in the hall at home, my arm about her, her head on my shoulder, while Luke played something on his violin—just as we three had been doing any evening until a few months ago.

I was only beginning to realize, now that I had leisure—or rather, a ghastly hell of nothing-to-do—how much I missed Rosanne. I had only left her for a day or two, as we thought, almost without farewells ; and then had come the hectic time in Paris and our enlistment ; and from then until now there had been no time to think of anything at all. . . .

What should I do if Luke died ? Slink back to the trenches and be shot next morning, blindfolded and tied to a post, as spies and deserters were, by the dozen ? Or really desert, and try to make my way back to England—to Rosanne ? I think—or let me be perfectly honest and say, I hope—that I decided to rejoin and take my chance of being shot for cowardice.

A fine end to our romantic and glorious adventure into a Holy War for Right against Might—Luke dead in the mud, of a foul disease ; I shot at dawn as a cowardly deserter, by a firing-squad of my own comrades.

*"I could not look on Death. This being known,
Men led me to him blindfold, and alone."*

It was Yrotavál who saved the situation. A more decent-minded man than I would give him full credit for a brave deed and a bright idea. I'm afraid that,

rightly or wrongly, I attribute what he did to his besetting avarice and greed. On the Battalion's second retirement to rest-billets, in the ruins of a village a mile or so to the north of where we were, he took the first opportunity of visiting the shack and warning me that Luke and I were posted as deserters, inasmuch as, though missing, we were not known to have been killed by shell-fire while in rest-billets, and could not have been taken prisoners.

On discovering the true state of affairs, and learning that neither of us had the faintest intention of deserting, he at once propounded a clever scheme for our salvation.

As soon as Luke was so far recovered as to be able at least to stand up, Yrotavál was to "discover" us in the wood, almost dead of dysentery and starvation. He was then to "rescue" us by bringing some friends who, partly supporting, partly carrying, us, were to contrive to get us back to the new rest-billets. There we were to lie recuperating, until the Battalion moved again. . . . With any luck, we should get away with it, inasmuch as we were Volunteers and men of excellent conduct and unblemished record.

From that moment, Luke began to recover, and made remarkably rapid progress. Next day, Yrotavál and Araña came, bringing a *bidon* of wine, another of coffee and a *gamelle* of *soupe*; and, the following day, he returned with Ouspenski, Araña and Oberg. The giant Ouspenski and the herculean Araña carried Luke; and, as we neared billets, I put my arms about the shoulders of Yrotavál and Oberg and was impressively supported down what had been the village street to the cellar in which the remains of our *escouade* was billeted. Obviously we had risen almost from our graves and returned to duty as soon as we were able

to move with the help of the comrades who had discovered us lying at death's door.

It would nevertheless have gone hardly with us had Sergeant Paggallini been in command of the Section, for he would have denounced us and done his best to get us court-martialled and shot as deserters.

Fortunately Corporal Hervé had been promoted in his place, and he actually welcomed us back from the dead, without a word of question. The numerous poor devils who had died of dysentery in those ghastly rest-billets had not died in vain, so far as we were concerned.

By the time the Battalion returned to the trenches, Luke was able to march, his accoutrements and kit being distributed among his friends.

§ 2

It did neither of us any good when the *vaguemestre* gave us each a letter from home, written by Rosanne, telling us that our father had died.

He had been ill for a long time, and the blow was not unexpected.

Poor Father. . . . He had not had a very happy life. Luke was always his favourite, but I loved him very much. Luke's going to the war broke his heart, and he never got over it.

There was no time for mourning—and little sensitiveness left in us, for suffering much grief.

§ 3

By the fortune of war and the mercy of God, we were only in those flooded open sewers, called trenches, for another fortnight, two weeks of indescribable and in-

credible hell, during which men died hourly and horribly—and were envied by the living. Just when I was beginning to wonder how much longer Luke's nerves would stand up to the incessant bombardment, the bitter cold, hunger and sodden misery, we were relieved and, by way of a rest, marched under driving rain, through squelching sucking mud, toward another sector of the line.

What would it be like? Of one thing we could be certain, grinned the *anciens*, and that was that it would be a change for the worse, to a place too bad to be held by the troops of the Line, otherwise the Legion would not be sent there.

As a matter of fact, it was only worse in point of intensity of bombardment, and was a great deal better from the view of comfort—a curious word to use in such a connection—for it was a quarry, and the dug-outs were almost dry, being excavated from a kind of gravelly chalk soil. Here, our death-rate was higher, but so were our spirits. Luke's health improved, in spite of constant and terrific din, for we slept dry, got our food regularly and in adequate quantity, and enjoyed the warmth of brazier fires. But it was a terribly anxious time when half our *escouade* marched away to the rear at night to draw our rations for the week, leaving the rest of us on duty in our trench. It always seemed to happen that Luke and I were separated, and I never knew, from minute to minute, whether I should see him again. It was bad enough when we were side by side, but as most of our casualties were from shell-fire, there was always the hope that we might be killed together by the same explosion.

The days passed and we both survived.

One day, having been relieved in our quarry by another Battalion of the Legion, we marched to garrison a Château, which had already changed hands about half a dozen times. For some good reason, the authorities were particularly anxious that it should now remain in French possession; and our Commandant guaranteed that, so long as it was entrusted to the care of the Legion, it would do so. He told us this himself, at evening parade, and it was a case of "'Nuff said." The Legion dies but does not surrender.

And the very next day, I saw a battle-picture that remains as an imperishable memory—hand-to-hand combat, with rifle and bayonet, between French troops in the uniform of 1870, *képi*, blue overcoat and baggy red breeches and all, against burly Germans in field-grey with *picklehaubes*, though these were now concealed beneath cotton covers.

It was at dawn on a foggy morning. Our *escouade* was on duty, guarding a door in the park wall of the Château. Greude was on sentry, standing on a wine-barrel filled with earth, so that he was able to look over the wall beside the door. The rest of the *escouade* were making coffee, washing, cleaning kit, or pursuing the coy reluctant louse to his fastnesses in the seams of their garments, when suddenly Greude shouted, threw up his rifle and fired. Almost simultaneously there was a loud explosion, the door was blown inward, and a swift rush of German soldiers followed it.

It was a soldiers' battle. With a shout of "*Aux armes!*" the *légionnaires* sprang to their feet, seized their rifles and dashed at the doorway.

At the moment that it happened, I was walking toward the rough lean-to shelter built against the wall,

in which the men off-duty had slept ; and, as I rushed toward it to get my rifle, I saw this picture that will never fade.

Luke, who was seated on the ground drinking coffee from his *quart*, put it down almost carefully, snatched up his rifle, sprang to his feet, fired at, and killed, the leading man, and then leapt like a tiger, long bayonet well advanced, just as though charging at bayonet-exercise. I had no time to be frightened, no time to think or feel. With a quick and clever feint and dodge, he evaded the second German's point and drove his own through the man's breast. Beside him was Araña, who, ducking under a German's darting bayonet, gave him a hay-maker that transfixed his throat.

As these two Germans staggered back against those behind them, Ouspenski, swinging his clubbed rifle, brought it crashing down on the head of another German who had just bayoneted poor René Barbey d'Aurillac. Another gigantic guardsman—for men of a Prussian Guard Battalion they were—drove at fat and beaming Père Bossuet who, parrying, made swift return and got his man, while another over the collapsing German's shoulder, drove his bayonet through Père Bossuet's chest.

All this happened in the few seconds during which I was running to the shelter. By the time I had seized my bayoneted rifle and looked again, more Germans had thrust in through the doorway, and our outnumbered *escouade* was being thrust back.

As I reached the *mêlée*, a great tall Grenadier, a handsome man with blue eyes and a golden beard, had thrown his rifle like a spear backward across his right shoulder, butt uppermost, and was putting all his

strength and weight into a downward drive at Luke, who, bending over the man he had stabbed, was endeavouring to withdraw his bayonet. It seemed to me that time stood still and that this swift and silent struggle took place in slow motion ; for, as the tall Prussian's bayonet-point descended, I took the liberty of blowing his brains out, and seemed to have plenty of time in which to do it. Luke's bayonet came out of the fallen German, and, side by side we stood for a moment, thrusting, parrying, grunting, panting and swearing. With the tail of my eye, I saw Luke's bayonet again go in, his enemy stagger back, saw the man drop his rifle and seize Luke as he did so, pulling him to the ground. Simultaneously, someone behind fired his rifle within an inch of my ear, deafening me and filling me with wrathful indignation, but shooting between the eyes at point-blank range, a man who was in the act of bayoneting me. As he fell back, I thrust with all my strength at the German who was fighting Luke, my bayonet striking his cartridge-pouch and bending almost double. Clubbing my rifle, I brought it down on the man's head, and then whirled it round and round with all my might, shoving forward, and clearing a little space as I did so. If you are tall, fairly strong, and your blood is up, a rifle held by the muzzle and used like a flail is, to my mind, a more effective weapon than a bayonet.

Anyhow, the Germans gave ground. Luke, Yrotavál and Araña beside him, charged forward with me, big Ouspenski, Oberg, Barnefeld and others, and we drove the enemy back, through the doorway, and out of the Château park.

Evidently it was only a raid for the purpose of getting *képis*, shoulder-straps, regimental badges, note-

books, letters, and other evidence as to the identity of the garrison of the Château.

As I sat on the ground beside Luke, gasping, panting, whooping for breath, as distressed as though I had won the half-mile in a sprint and record time, I felt happy ; happy that I was a re-instated self-respecting soldier, instead of a skulking deserter ; happy that Luke was again so well, strong and active ; and I felt prouder of him than ever I had been before, and that is saying something.

I am not of a literary turn, I am not particularly well-read, but there came to my mind some lines learnt by heart when I was at our Prep. School, of which the Head was a keen Shakespearean scholar :

*" I do not think a braver Gentleman,
More active-valiant, nor more valiant-young,
More daring, or more bold, is now alive,
To grace this latter age with noble deed."*

With noble deed ! Poor Luke. . . .

VIII

WELL, as I have said, I have no desire to write a war-book, or to give an account of Life in the French Foreign Legion under war conditions. So I will just say that our Battalion was in the thick of the fighting the whole time, was decimated and reinforced a dozen times, was kept in the Line until it was a skeleton battalion of skeleton men, withdrawn, re-fitted, brought up to strength and sent back again, time after time ; and that Luke and I seemed to bear charmed lives.

Bullets tore our clothes ; Luke's *bidon* was drilled twice as we dashed across No Man's Land under machine-gun fire ; my *képi* was shot from my head as I peered over the parapet at dawn, one morning ; and during a night raid, my right ear was torn by a bullet and my left fore-arm deeply scratched by a bayonet.

Greude died, saying something in a language which I did not understand, a bullet through his chest, giving his life as he had wished to do, fighting against Oppression.

Rassedjn, decorated and promoted to Sergeant, was killed by a shell which blew his right leg off. He lingered for a few hours, dying of shock and loss of blood, his last words being,

“ Well, well, *mon ami*, life's been very amusing. . . .

Death is probably more so. . . ." In the breast pocket of his tunic was a valuable and beautiful miniature, in a gold case or locket, of a very lovely girl. There was a crest and motto on the case.

The last I saw of Oberg was in a German trench. Ten of us, with blackened hands and faces, made a night raid to get regimental badges, in order that the authorities might identify the enemy battalion that had that day taken over the trenches opposite to us.

Three of us returned, Araña, Brancker and I.

Drücke was wounded, patched up, sent back to the Battalion, and shot through the head the next day.

By the time that Luke succumbed to strain, hardship and illness, and was sent to hospital, only I, Yrotavál, Araña and Hervé remained of the original *escouade*.

In point of fact, I was glad when Luke cracked up. Our luck had lasted too long, and every time he went back from rest-billets to the trenches, I thought of the Pitcher and the Well. It was too much to hope that this charmed-life business could continue indefinitely, with Death waiting for him in a dozen forms and in a hundred places.

We were at a place called La Roche Something-or-other—La Roche Nazaire, I think—when Luke fell ill. Dysentery—unless it was typhoid—again. And it was quite obvious that he was not only far too weak to march, but utterly unfit for duty. By that time, things were much better organized, and medical arrangements were not too bad, even in the Legion.

As we were in real rest-billets, and actually resting—save for a trifle of daily drill, route-marching, bomb-throwing training, bayonet exercise, rehearsal for new kinds of trench-attack and mopping-up work by

nettoyeurs des tranchées, and the eternal digging and building of dug-outs, cook-houses, officers' quarters, casualty-clearing-posts and so on—the sick could get proper attention, especially if their friends knew how to get it for them. I haven't a word to say against French Army doctors, as a class, but I do say that the War threw up one or two of the type who were more than willing to profit by it.

Anyhow, having been informed by an American comrade that our temporary *Médecin-Major* was amenable to a certain form of argument, I interested him in Luke, whom he promptly declared unfit for duty, as of course he was, and ordered him to be sent at once to hospital. It was with almost undiluted joy that I saw him carried on a stretcher, by a couple of *brancardiers*, along the *boyreau* to where a motor-ambulance awaited its load of sick and wounded.

Had I but known what I was doing for him !

§ 2

In the peace of the quiet hospital at Pont Mailleul, fifty kilometres from the Line and forty from the war-zone, Luke made slow but steady recovery, as I heard from time to time, when other sick and wounded men rejoined us from that same hospital.

When he was convalescent, he used to sit, with other flotsam and jetsam of the wreckage of war, sunning himself and preparing to take up Life again ; to take it up exactly where he had laid it down ; to resume the crushing weight of the cross which, voluntarily, he had laid upon his young shoulders. And on the very day before he was to return to that nerve-and-mind-and-soul-shattering Hell from which he had

briefly escaped, a German aviator—flying “ *high above War’s sorrows and seeing only its beauties* ” perhaps—saw among them a defenceless hospital, plainly marked with a colossal Red Cross, a hospital full of doctors ; and of those, perhaps noblest of all human beings, nurses ; and of wounded sick and shattered men.

And on this hospital the young hero released his bombs.

A young hero, soul-mate and blood-brother of him who torpedoed the hospital ships with their cargo of wounded men, doctors, and the ministering angels we call nurses.

One bomb fell almost at Luke’s feet. The marvel is that he was not blown to pieces. I had almost written, in my bitterness, the pity is that he was not blown to pieces, as his manhood was, his character, his self-respect, his self-confidence, his very self itself.

When I feel that my Luke, the *real* Luke, was left in that hole from which they dug his blinded body, I want to kill every cursed, bellowing, bullying Dictator and War-monger in the world. I wish that all the Dictators and War-Lords had but one throat—that I might cut it with a blunt knife.

It was, of course, part of the very pattern of our fate that on the same day that it happened I was sent away, our Battalion was moved to Verdun, and plunged into that unique Hell of man’s mad destructive folly, that long-drawn battle of heroic maniacs which was the bloodiest, most brutal and most horrible that the world has ever seen, and that I pray God the world may ever see.

I will not re-tell its story, but merely say that I survived, physically uninjured, and that the poor

pitiful remnants of the Battalion were again brought up to strength and transferred to the Somme.

In point of fact, I don't remember very much of this last phase, this campaign which was one long battle, for my mind was as deaf as were the ears of my body, as shaken and as shattered ; and I was too stupid for the reception of other impressions than those of hunger and pain and horror.

After the battle of the Somme, what little was left of the Battalion was disbanded. Soon a rumour spread that the whole Legion was going to be returned to Africa, and there built up again from the nothing that it almost was. In point of fact, this proved to be true. Our own Battalion was paraded, addressed by the Colonel in a speech of such eloquence as only a real hard-bitten fighting French Colonel can use when addressing his men ; and the tiny handful of surviving Volunteers was given the choice of going to the dépôt at Sidi-bel-Abbès, leaving France for ever, and becoming regular *légionnaires* ; of being transferred to a French Line Regiment ; or, in the case of those whose countries were already fighting the Germans, of joining their own national Army.

Most of the Legion Volunteers chose the second course, and a small draft of Americans, Britons, Belgians, Russians and Italians was transferred, and the young veterans became French Infantry soldiers in the 170th Regiment of the Line.

I personally elected to quit the French Army and join my own, the real inducement being neither that I wanted to get a respite from war nor that I desired to begin again as a recruit in a British Regiment, but that I felt I must go home or go mad.

I must see Luke.

For I had had a letter from Rosanne telling me that Luke was at home and that Luke was *blind*!

Luke was blind.

I must see Luke and I must see Rosanne. I must see them both—and the seeing of Rosanne might soften the blow and mitigate the agony of seeing Luke, ~~as~~ ^{his} bell shocked and . . . *blind*.

One curious little memory I have of the terrible time before the frayed and tattered remnants of the Battalion was disbanded, is that as I marched, as I stared out over the parapet, as I worked at the innumerable fatigues, as I lay in the mud of my dug-out, I repeated endlessly to myself—and not only to myself but aloud, for my comrades would turn and stare at me :

*" And neither the angels in Heaven above,
Nor the demons down under the sea,
Can ever dissever my soul from the soul
Of the beautiful Annabel Lee."*

I don't know much poetry, and I doubt whether Luke would admit that this is poetry; but, whether poetry or prose, whether jingling rubbish or beautiful verse, it expressed my feelings then and it expresses them now. . . . Rosanne.

The actual disbanding of the Battalion was to me a heart-breaking business, rendered a little less poignant by the fact that my oldest and best friends among the *légionnaires* and Volunteers were dead: Greude, Rassedin, Ouspenski, Oberg, Barnefeld, Dolgorousky, Ericsson, Drücke, Hervé, Brancker, Barbey d'Aurillac, Père Bossuet. Of the men, with whom I had eaten and drunk and marched; laughed, worked and drilled; fought, lived and had my being at Toulon, and in the

early days of the War, the only survivors were Yrotavál (who had been in the bombed hospital at Port Maillleul) and Araña, who took a literally tearful farewell of me. Unashamedly and unrestrainedly, the poor Spider cried like a child, put his great arms about me and kissed me on both cheeks as though I had been his brother, nay more, as though I were his own Yrotavál. It was probably a case of "transference," for since he had lost Yrotavál, he had been lost indeed.

I loathed going but I could not stay, much as I would have preferred to do so, for not only did I feel that Rosanne's letters told me less than the truth about Luke's condition, but I really and honestly felt that I should not much longer be of real use to any unit in which I continued to serve. Although bodily I was in not too bad shape, mentally I was near the end of my tether.

I was in need of healing.

The bomb that struck Luke blind—and, for all I knew, paralytic if not insane—had stricken me. It had done something to me that I could not understand, but which had, I knew, placed me in jeopardy. I realized that I was in need of healing, and I believed that only Rosanne could help me. If Luke were, as I feared, not only blinded but shell-shocked to insanity, not even Rosanne could heal me, but she could help. She could help me—as she was helping Luke, God reward her. And it was possible that I, too, could help him.

Anyhow, go I must, for Luke's sake and for my own sake. I must know the worst about him and the best about her, the best for me, that is to say—that she loved me.

I needed no assurance, of course, that she loved me

in one way. She had always done that, from the very first, almost from the time we met in Switzerland, and certainly from the earliest days of her coming to live with us at Courtesy Court.

But I wanted more than that.

§ 3

I reached England and home safely, to find Luke not so badly shell-shocked as I had feared, broken and wrecked, but resigned; infinitely brave and patient; *blind*; devotedly nursed by Rosanne; and valeted, guarded and waited on, hand and foot, by—*El Señor Don Caballero Yrotavál y Rewes*.

§ 4

I don't know that I was myself shell-shocked, but I was so shocked by this blow, this appalling tragedy of Luke's blindness, that I was as stunned, stupid and disorientated as if I too had been blown up and buried alive. I felt numbed.

There is something merciful about such numbness of mind, but nothing about the awakening from it.

Apart from being blind, poor Luke was so strange. I shall never forget how, the afternoon of my arrival, when we were sitting in a circle about the fire, having tea, he suddenly burst into speech, almost as though he were delirious. No, it was more as though he were a prophet or a seer, and I felt inexpressibly uncomfortable and miserable. Besides Luke, Rosanne and I, there was our local medical man, Dr. Watson (whom Luke insisted on addressing as "my dear Watson"); the Harley Street nerve-specialist Abernethy, who

was waiting to be driven to the station to get his train back to London ; the Vicar and his wife, who were most kind and helpful ; our friend and neighbour, Giulia Brent-Grayleigh, and Athene who had, as she said, dashed down to hear Dr. Abernethy's latest report on Luke.

Suddenly Luke, who had been sitting silent staring with his blind eyes at nothing, turned and pointed with levelled finger unerringly at my breast. Of course he knew where I was, from the sound of my voice, but it was uncanny.

" See the Conquering Hero," he said. " Behold his medalled breast. Medalled, not muddled. Would that you all could behold also the scene which I can see. The remnants of the Moroccan Division on parade ; with a battery of the Colonial Artillery on the right of the line ; a Squadron of Chasseurs d'Afrique next ; then Zouaves, Turcos, Tirailleurs and the Legion. A blaze of colour. Light-blue shakos ; scarlet fezzes ; blue dolmans ; red trousers. . . . The bugles blow the *Garde à vous*. Splendid *Chefs de Battalion* bawl their orders, and the beautiful herbaceous border forms itself into a brilliant flower-bed.

" More booming shouts of *Faites les faisceaux* and *Sacs à terre*. The skeleton Division stands at ease, forming three sides of a square. A distant bugle warns the Commandant that the great General Lyautey himself approaches. Again fife and drum sound the order *Garde à vous*. More shouts.

" '*Rompez les faisceaux. Sacs à dos. À droite, alignement. . . . Fixe.*'

" And the flower-bed of glowing colour, over which the wind had rippled, is now motionless, frozen solid. Another roar :

“ ‘ *Baionettes au canon.* ’

“ As though a flash of lightning had crossed the flower-bed, a thousand bayonets leap from their scabbards and are fixed to the rifles. And again there is perfect immobility and silence.

“ And then the great General gallops up, followed by his glittering staff. The *clique* of the Legion shrills and crashes forth ‘ *Le Générale.* ’

“ Simultaneously on the order ‘ *Présentez armes !* ’ every man brings up his rifle to the *présent*, and stands like a rock. The General, with eyes like those of an eagle, trots round the three sides of the square, inspecting the veteran survivors, takes up his place in the centre of the blank side, and sits at attention, while the massed bands of the battalions play *Au Drapeau* followed by the *Marseillaise*.

“ And then, out from the ranks of the Legion battalion marches our Mark, and salutes with the precision of a Guardsman.

“ The great General dismounts from his horse, pins the *Médaille Militaire* beside the *Croix de Guerre* on Mark’s broad bosom, and kisses him on either cheek. . . . Serve him right for being such a bloody hero.

“ Mark, blinking back his tears and swallowing a lump in his throat, salutes like two Guardsmen, and returns to the ranks.

“ Then, to roars of ‘ *En avant par quatres. En avant. Marchez,* ’ and to the strains of the March of the Legion, Mark (and the other *légionnaires*) go by. To the air of *Sidi Brahim*, the Zouaves, Turcos, and Tirailleurs follow ; and our Mark . . . Mark. . . . ”

Suddenly Luke bowed his head almost to his knees and, covering his face with his hands, burst into tears.

Dreadful.

I learned then the meaning of the word 'heart-rending.'

§ 5

"Is there no hope for his eyes?" I asked Dr. Abernethy, as I saw him out to his car.

"I am not an oculist," he growled, for there was nothing of the bland Society Physician about this man. "He ought to see one, later on. The best in England. I suggest Sir Theophilus Grant. Your brother says he is satisfied with the verdict of the Paris specialist, Renier; and I suppose he's about the best in Europe. But he could have another opinion. Keep the idea before him, anyway."

"There's always hope, I suppose," I begged him to admit.

"Hope? Hope's free. And easy. But after what Renier said . . ."

"He's getting better otherwise?" I said.

"Oh, yes . . . Yes. He'll be all right—in time. Absolute rest and . . . It may sound foolish to say it . . . freedom from anxiety, worry. He mustn't brood. So far as it can be prevented, I mean. He's getting the best of nursing, but it is mental nursing he needs most. Wants taking out of himself, cheering up. He must have some sort of occupation and constant cheerful companionship . . . You staying here?"

"For the present," I said.

"Miss Van Daten?"

"Yes. She'll stay at home. On purpose to look after him."

"Splendid . . . Right. I'll see him again in a

week's time. Meanwhile Doctor Watson knows what to do."

And with what was almost a twinkle in his cold grey eye, very nearly a whimsical smile on his tight mouth, he added,

"And Miss Van Daten knows what to do—I think."

IX

IT is useless for me to attempt to give the slightest idea of how I felt about Luke—and Rosanne.

For a start, I was in the very queerest mental condition myself, as I imagine all were who survived Verdun, not to mention the Somme.

In the second place, had I been perfectly normal on reaching home, the blow that I received on seeing my poor brother so changed, so quiet, so broken and *blind*, would have knocked me out completely.

And in the third place, I was just dying to take Rosanne in my arms and . . . well . . . give way ; loosen the string of the over-taut bow that soon must break ; tell her how I loved her, or rather, try to do so ; hear her say that she loved me ; marry her at once ; to have a honeymoon that should be a heaven upon earth even more ineffably glorious than the Legion, the trenches, Verdun, and the Somme, had been an indescribably bitter murderous hell. A War wedding, a brief honeymoon, and then back to my duty ; the plain duty, simple and inescapable, that I must perform until my brother was avenged, Right had conquered Might, and Liberty was assured.

But how could I contemplate such a thing as love and marriage, with blind Luke hanging, not so much between life and death, as between sanity and insanity, salvation and destruction ? For, quiet calm and self-

controlled as he was, one knew that it was unnatural, his quiet air but a mask, that his apparent normality was but the crust over the seething lava of the white-hot volcano which sooner or later must explode, erupt—with God knew what consequences to his sanity, his health, his life.

How *could* such a temperament as Luke's resign itself to *blindness*, to eternal darkness and blackness? Luke, who so loved beauty, and whose pleasure and joy came to him so largely through his artist's eyes.

It would have been impossible had he been normal; but he had been through all that I had been through, had suffered all that I had suffered—and I was anything but normal.

I knew that what I needed for my salvation was a rest-cure in a place of perfect peace and silence, where I could have the help of the best of those wonderful doctors who really understand the inter-relation of mind and body, and who can save the poor, trembling, shaken, shattered, though unwounded body, by ministration to the mind that governs it. I wanted, and indeed I needed, that; but even more I needed something else, something far more efficacious. I needed Rosanne. Rosanne's mere presence. That alone, without Rosanne's love and care and ministration and sympathy, would have been enough.

But who needed it the more? Luke or I?

Luke. For he was every bit as ill, mentally and physically, as I; and he was blind.

And slowly it dawned on me, with a pain greater than any that I had ever suffered or ever should suffer, that not only did Luke need Rosanne's presence as much as I did, but *wanted* it.

And of course, it was possible that he wanted her quite as much as I did.

There is a vast difference between needing and wanting, for one may need something infinitely distasteful. But suppose Luke did, as I feared, want her as much as he undoubtedly needed her, *could* I, could I, try to come between her and my blind brother, for my own joy and delight and benefit? Could I try to take that which was, quite probably, his only chance of salvation? And if I could do it, and if Rosanne could consent to my doing it, where would be the joy? How could I ever have a happy hour, even with Rosanne?

And so I tried to kill this love that had grown to be the most powerful factor in my life; tried to throw the cold water of common sense, common decency, and perfectly common unselfishness upon the raging, fiery furnace of love that consumed my heart.

What made it ten times more difficult than it would otherwise have been, was the fact that Rosanne was so kind, so affectionate, so loving. The kiss that should have been an ineffable and soul-melting joy was a torture; and one of the hardest things that I had ever had to do was to place my hands upon her shoulders and kiss her soft, sweet, lovely mouth, morning and night, as might the most affectionate of brothers—and not take her in my arms, crush her to my breast, bruise her lips with burning kisses and ask her to marry me. How could I bear to sit beside her on the old deep settee before the log fire, with my arm about her shoulders, as we had done a thousand times before the War, and not gather her up to me and pour out my love?

How could I, with Luke there in his chair beside

the fire, a black bandage about his eyes, sitting there so remote ; aloof ; alive, but dead to all that made life lovely ; sitting there in that ancient panelled hall in which he had grown up, of which he knew every tiny detail as he knew his own face, and yet, at the same time, sitting there in that prison of eternal night, that dreadful cell of black velvet darkness from which there was no escape ? It was, in a way, worse than being in the worst prison cell, inasmuch as there was no end, no escape from it, for it must go with him wheresoever he might go, unto the last day of his life.

Could I make love to Rosanne—no, I hate that expression—could I tell Rosanne I loved her ? Could I show her, by any act or word or deed, that I *worshipped* her ; while Luke sat there needing her, depending on her, wanting her perhaps as much as I myself did ?

Yet that seemed to me to be impossible, for every man thinks, and tells the woman whom he loves, that no one could ever love her as he does ; that no man has ever loved any woman as he loves her.

Well then, as I must remember, did not the same apply to Luke ? Did he not feel—as he sat there, silent, with that awful, eternal blackness pressing down upon him, the darkness that would have made me shriek like a tortured child—did not he too feel that no one could love Rosanne as he did ; that no man in this world had ever loved woman as he loved Rosanne ?

Looking back, it was strange to realize that neither he nor she had yet said anything of this to me. But I knew it ; and I had the strength to hold my peace.

Yes, Luke was changed. He was utterly different from the Luke that I had known. This was not to be

wondered at ; but it was terrible, it was heart-breaking, to contemplate this new and different Luke.

How shall I describe it ? Best, perhaps, describe him, and it will be seen that I am speaking of a different man.

In the first place, this laughter-loving jester, so inconsequent, so irrepressible and irresponsible, now never laughed. Very, very rarely did he smile ; and when he did, it gave one a heart-ache to see it—so patient, so resigned and gentle, on the face of the man who had been so merry, so happy, so full of life and laughter, the man who had been my brother Luke. He spoke but little, and that soberly and seriously. Before, he was an incorrigible jester who made fun of everything and, with witty speech, kept his hearers ever on the verge of smiles, chuckles or downright hilarity. Unconsciously, one always looked for the double-meaning, the sly allusion, and the humorous twist. When he appeared serious, it was only that his sober mien might add point to the outrageous nonsense that he was talking.

All this was gone, and that fact alone told anyone who knew him and loved him as we did, how changed he was.

And he was *blind*.

Freely I admit that I would not have believed that Luke, the frivolous, the volatile, the effervescent, could ever have borne so terrible an affliction with such stoicism, such uncomplaining patience, such noble dignity. I knew that I could not have done it. If I had formerly admired as well as envied him, what was now the measure of my admiration for such courage, such wonderful self-control ? Luke touched the heights, and the least that I could do was to watch

that I did not touch the depths—by trying to win Rosanne from him, trying to make her love me, marry me, go away with me upon that incredible honeymoon that in the trenches I had pictured, before I knew that Luke was blind.

How could I compete with him when he needed her so? I could as soon have struck a child and robbed it of its treasured necklace. I could as soon have stolen the coppers from the tin that hung about the neck of a blind . . .

Oh, my God! . . . *Blind, blind, blind.* Luke was blind . . . and loved Rosanne.

I am sorry for this outburst.

Almost always Luke wore a black silk bandage bound about his eyes and head. Sometimes, especially when he was taken out of the house, he wore big spectacles of black glass instead. Just occasionally, especially when we were alone, he and I and Rosanne, he wore nothing at all over his eyes. For, thank God, except for discoloration and a look of soreness, they were apparently undamaged and he was in no way disfigured.

He managed wonderfully; grew extraordinarily clever at so managing; and unobservant visitors who knew nothing of his tragedy might well have come into the drawing-room, stayed an hour for tea, and gone without knowing that he was blind.

The only abnormality about him, save for the fact that his eyes were often red and bloodshot, was the way he held his head, slightly raised; and the fact that, although he looked straight toward you when you spoke to him, he looked (or rather appeared to

look, of course) over your head. It was as curious as it was painful, to notice how he always looked a little too high.

I was immeasurably thankful, in a situation where, God knows, there was little enough for which to be thankful, that his wonderful eyes were not destroyed. It would have been even worse than it was, if he had had unsightly cavities, hidden by permanently closed, red-rimmed, eyelids. He was, of course, fine-drawn and haggard-looking, for that was inevitable after what he had been through ; but he was still handsome, handsomer than any man I have ever seen. Did I not dislike the word intensely, as applied to a man, I could say, with truth, that he was beautiful.

How could Rosanne do other than love him ?

It was as lovely as it was painful to see her with Luke, to whom she was nurse, mother, sister and sweetheart in one. I say "sweetheart" because the brotherly love he must always have borne her, even though he had not shown it much, was now quite obviously changed, developed and increased. Before he went away, he had but rarely kissed her, even with a perfunctory good-night ; had scarcely ever touched her, save to administer a fraternal thump ; and he had sought her society but little—not that there had been any need for this, so assiduously had she sought his.

But now he could not see enough of her. (God, how one uses that word—of him who could not see her at all.) He could never have enough of her presence ; was never happy when she was away from him. It now gave him most obvious delight to touch her, to sit with her hand in his, to stroke her hair and to kiss her.

In her sweet thoughtfulness and consideration, she would often come and sit beside me too, or perch on the arm of my chair, her arm about my neck ; she would stroke my hair, stick a finger against the corner of my mouth and say,

“ Turn it up at the corners, darling. It used to smile so nicely,” and things of that sort.

Imagine what it cost me to refrain from responding as I yearned to do.

Don't think that Rosanne was one of those girls who “ paw ” people. Quite the reverse. No one could be kinder, more gentle, more responsive ; but she was not what could be called demonstrative. With all her sweetness, there was, indeed, an astringent quality about Rosanne. She had the wonderful saving grace of faintly sardonic humour ; and was endowed with what I might perhaps call a very puncturing wit. There never lived a human being less patient of pretence or falseness ; or who was less of a humbug. And oh, how she despised and detested humbug of every kind ! Beyond anything, she loathed the false, the unreal, the specious ; and if any of her friends, acquaintances or relations were marred by those defects, or indulged in anything of that sort, they obtained from sweet Rosanne a sharply acid reaction.

I am quite certain that she had more use, as they say, for an out-and-out cheerful villain than for a mealy-mouthed person of ostentatiously blameless life ; for a big, bold crook than for a mean swindler of lesser calibre. And, as she once remarked, she definitely preferred a bad man of the best sort, to a good one of the worst kind.

I don't want to idealize and apotheosize Rosanne. I fully and freely admit that she was no angel—except

when nursing and guarding and solacing Luke, when she was ministering angel incarnate. She had a temper, and she was a good hater. She was no believer in meekness—possibly because she had no desire to inherit the earth. She was no admirer of the poor in spirit—perhaps because she had not the faintest desire to possess the Kingdom of Heaven. But she was a merciful lover of mercy ; a peace-maker before all things ; and pure in heart as purity itself. Nevertheless she was not religious. In point of fact, a person who was known to be very “ good ” and strictly righteous, started heavily handicapped in her sight, and had to prove that goodness and religiosity were not incompatible with human humour, sportsmanship, good fellowship, broad tolerance, wide sympathy, and deep understanding of the frailties of common men and women.

She had a splendid sense of humour, loved a joke, wasn't too easily shocked, and never never pretended to be shocked when she was not—though I should be sorry to be the humorist who gave her real cause to take offence.

No, with all her great gift of sympathy, kindness and love, her real fundamental goodness of heart, Rosanne was not perfect, thank God, and there never lived a woman less faultily faultless, icily regular, splendidly null.

Nor would I say that Rosanne was particularly forgiving toward anyone who had once really roused her anger and resentment. And that, doubtless, was part of her tenacity. For remarkably tenacious she was, and it was even more true of her than of most women, that you might convince her against her will and she'd be of the same opinion still.

Why did I love her so? I suppose, in the first place—human nature being what it is—for her very piquant beauty of face and figure, the great attractiveness of her little ways, her personality as well as her person, her vivacity; and partly for her *responsiveness*. She was so enthusiastic about things, so warmly interested, and so appreciative. She entered into things with such zest. She never failed you; and you always said to yourself, at once, “I must tell Rosanne” or “I must show Rosanne,” knowing that, whatever it might be, Rosanne would be as interested and appreciative as you were yourself.

Rosanne understood. Rosanne was with you. Whatever you did or saw or enjoyed was of double value if Rosanne were there; and if you did or saw anything alone, you immediately, if unconsciously, thought how much more enjoyable it would have been if Rosanne had been with you.

No wonder Luke loved her.

No wonder he loved her, even before she became his nurse, his mother, his guardian angel, the light of his darkness, the invisible yet shining light that must paradoxically have illuminated that blank black night of horror in which he lived.

And when I had got my breath, so to speak; recovered from the numbing blow of seeing Luke blinded and changed; had to some extent got the better of my selfish agony at realizing that Rosanne was for Luke and not for me; and had begun, in a numbed way, to accept the terribly abnormal as the normal, the new and ordained and inevitable way of life, I had time to consider the phenomenon and portent of the

incredible presence at Courtesy Court of the amazing El Señor Don Cabellero Yrotavál y Rewes.

§ 2

Luke told me that he owed more to Yrotavál than ever he could repay. The Catalan had saved his life, saved his reason, and had got him home. Not only did Luke feel that what Yrotavál had done gave him a claim upon Luke for life ; but the fellow had, moreover, made himself indispensable. He was not only the perfect valet, but an admirable male nurse ; and did for Luke all those things that Rosanne could not do. From the time he brought him his morning tea, shaved him, turned on his bath, led him to it, helped him bathe and dress, to the time he put him to bed, he was his constant companion, guide and guardian, when Rosanne was not with him.

She gave him every minute that she could spare, and spent the greater part of almost every morning, afternoon and evening with him ; but there were times when she had to leave him as she had other duties and calls upon her time, for not only was she nursing Luke, straining every nerve to bring him back to health and normality, but she was running Courtesy Court. Since our father's death, Athene had done this very competently, but, directly war broke out, she had plunged into a whirl of Red Cross, and other, activities, and left the care of the house and estate to her daughter.

I gathered from what Rosanne told me, and Luke hinted, that Athene had rushed down from London the moment she got Rosanne's wire telling of Luke's return and of his condition, but had been unable to

stay for long. It appeared that she had been simply and genuinely unable to bear the sight of Luke, whom she had always loved devotedly, blinded and shell-shocked. And in the light of its effect upon myself, I was able to see how terrible it must have been for Athene, who was essentially tender-hearted and loving.

Anyhow, having seen how devotedly and successfully Rosanne was able to nurse him, and how efficiently his Spanish valet looked after him, she had returned to her important duties at Lady Angela Kinloch's hospital.

Although my mother's death had been my first real grief, and was indeed one of the great griefs of my life, I was now positively glad she had not lived to see Luke like this. It would have broken her heart, for she worshipped him. It would have been bad enough for Father who was devoted to Luke, but it would have killed Mother, or broken her for life. She was not strong, and whenever Luke cut his finger or had a sore throat, it was a tragedy that temporarily reduced her to the very lowest depths. This would have been a murderous and fatal blow to her, poor darling.

Yrotavál's attitude to me was interesting and a little puzzling, with its mixture of the old familiarity of the comrade-in-arms and the new deference of a household servant to the *patrón*, the head of the family. In the Legion, as an *ancien* and a man of vast experience, he had treated me with familiarity—tinged with the natural contempt of the old soldier for the recruit, but diluted with the miserable respect of the extremely poor man for the comparatively rich.

Now he addressed me as Señor, and his attitude was one of deference, if not respect. But I was conscious of something else in his manner, something of an elusive quality which was not quite irony. Yrotavál never obviously had his tongue in his cheek, but he had a glint in his eye, though there was nothing whatsoever to which one could take offence.

Sometimes I wished there were.

His manner to Luke was perfect. To me it was imperfect. To Luke he was unreservedly respectful, attentive and solicitous. To me he was reservedly respectful and neither attentive nor solicitous.

I think I can honestly say that I am one of the last people in the world to care twopence about the attitudes of other people toward myself. I don't use ceremony or desire other people to do so; I don't stand on my dignity, for I can imagine no more insecure footing for any sensible and self-respecting person. I take not the slightest pleasure in bows, salutes, and greetings in the market-place; I like to give and receive civility, but I detest servility; and had Yrotavál been an ordinary valet or male nurse engaged by or for Luke, I should not have been in the slightest degree interested in the question of his attitude to me, in his manner, respectful or disrespectful.

But this was different. I knew a very great deal about Yrotavál, and most of it to his disadvantage. He was, on his own showing, a damned abominable scoundrel, and of all people whom I had ever met, the very last one I would have chosen to see installed in the same house with Rosanne, especially a house of which she had the responsibility and care.

On the other hand, he seemed to suit Luke splendidly and to serve him perfectly; and after all, that was

what he was there for. Realizing this, I would take myself to task for my prejudice and suspicion, put the matter from my mind, and then have it all brought back again by some word from Yrotavál, some look on his sinister leathern visage. He was tough, and one expected him to be tough ; and I was surprised to find him so much the soft-footed, soft-voiced valet and nurse. But what one did not expect was an occasional glimpse of what perhaps I might call the iron hand in the velvet glove, a certain masterfulness just under the deference ; positively a hint, at times, of the whip-hand ; of a too robust self-confidence and self-regard.

I decided, in the end, that I was fanciful and foolish, and that, had I been in normal mental and physical health, I should not have been so sensitive to atmosphere and attitude, and should never have noticed or fancied anything of the sort, and if I had, should not have given it a second thought. Doubtless I was entirely wrong, and even if Yrotavál sometimes wore an air of one who acted a part, he *was* acting a part, and a very novel one.

Of him, more than anybody I ever met, it was surely true that each man in his time plays many parts. But surely this rôle of deft *valet de chambre* and ministering angel was a new and strange part for a scoundrelly gunman, crook, terrorist, police spy, gaol-bird and toughest of tough *légionnaires*. Surely that would account for anything "different " in Yrotavál's manner, for he could hardly be leading a more different life from that which he had been leading. *Autres jours autres mœurs.*

Nevertheless, when I had said it all, the fact remained that there was something faintly disturbing about Yrotavál's attitude as of one who—what shall I say—

bides his time, has something up his sleeve, knows more than he says, could say a lot more than he does—and all that sort of thing.

One day I asked Rosanne how she liked him.

“How do I like him?” she replied. “I cannot tell you how, Mark, because I don’t like him at all. In point of fact, I detest him.”

“My dear, if he has ever said one word, or . . .” I began, feeling my blood begin to boil and my fists to clench, wretched nerve-symptoms all too ready and frequent in those days.

“Heavens, no! His manner is perfect. And it makes my flesh creep. The way he looks at me . . .”

“But, Rosanne! If ever he gave you so much as an insolent look, I’d . . .”

“Insolence? Not a bit of it. I could deal with that myself. Oh, no, quite the reverse.”

“Then what?”

“Nothing. Absolutely nothing. No complaints. I haven’t a word against the man, except that I hate the sight of him. He makes my blood run cold. There is something absolutely repellent about him. I feel that he is evil incarnate. And I am very grateful to him for the splendid way in which he manages Luke, and for all he does for him. But oh, how I wish . . .”

“Look here, Rosanne, he’s not the only pebble on the beach. First-class valets can still be got, and so can trained male nurses. I’ll speak to Luke.”

“No. No. Please don’t, Mark. It would be an awful thing to get rid of the man, just because I don’t particularly like him . . . when Luke likes him so very much. He seems to suit him perfectly.”

“And that’s something in his favour,” I said.

“It’s everything,” agreed Rosanne. “Absolutely

everything. At any rate, while he's still suffering from shell-shock."

"Yes, yes. But there are others. I'll have a talk with him about it," I said.

Rosanne was right and I was wrong, as usual; for when I spoke to Luke on the subject of replacing Yrotavál by a properly trained English male nurse, who could also do what valeting was necessary, he seemed absolutely horrified at the mere idea of parting with him, and literally implored me to put any such idea out of my mind. From being suppliant he became absolutely angry, and spoke as though I wanted to upset him, disturb such peace as he had attained, and generally do him harm. I was amazed at the importance that he attached to Yrotavál's services, presence, and company.

"My dear chap, I simply could not carry on without him," he said. "If Yrotavál were turned away, I should . . . I should . . . well, I should go with him."

I begged him not to talk like that, and assured him that nothing was further from my thoughts than to do anything to which he would not agree; that my sole object was to replace an amateur nurse and valet by a professional; and to find somebody less alien, less exotic, and who would fit better into the scheme of our quiet life at Courtesy Court.

"But I don't want anyone better," objected Luke. "He suits me perfectly. Besides, don't you realize that but for him I shouldn't be here? I owe him my life! . . . What has he done that you want to start hunting and hounding him out of . . ."

"But, my dear boy," I assured him, "nothing in the world is further from my thoughts than to get rid

of Yrotavál if he is necessary to you. We'd do anything to keep him, so long as you feel like that about it."

"Well, I do feel like that about it. . . . What is your objection to him? What has he done? Some damned prudish house-maid or scullery-wench think he's cocking a wicked eye at her? So long as he looks after *my* eyes . . . These damned country bumpkins with their '*Here's a foreigner, let's chuck a brick at him*'! It's absolutely sickening and disgusting that . . ."

"Listen, old man," I soothed and assured him, "no one has a word to say against Yrotavál's work or conduct; and he'll be here until you yourself turn him out, or he himself says he wants to go. I only wanted to ask whether you wouldn't sooner have an Englishman."

"Well, I wouldn't. And if he doesn't go till I kick him out, he'll be here for ever. And if he doesn't go until he himself wants to, he'll be here just as long and a bit longer. . . . Where would he go? He couldn't go back to his own country. You know the Spanish police want him, not to mention those damned Anarchist and Communist thugs who pride themselves on always getting their man if he turns informer. And he can't go to France or he'll be arrested as a deserter from . . . I mean to say, he'd . . . Well, he's got to earn his living somewhere, hasn't he? And talking of which, where would he earn as good a living, or earn it as easily, as he does here? No, Yrotavál won't leave me in a hurry, Mark, so don't you think it or try to make him."

"'Nuff said, old chap," I soothed him. "Yrotavál's here for life, since you want him to stay. What about a turn in the garden?" And putting my hand beneath his arm, I led him from the room, out on to the lawn.

So that was that, and we must regard Yrotavál as

a fixture. Nevertheless, there was nothing to prevent my taking what steps I could toward making that fixture adapt itself to its surroundings. If Luke had told Yrotavál that he had got a job for life at Courtesy Court, I could do my best to persuade him that it was, at any rate to some extent, dependent upon his conduct and general attitude. Sort of *quamdiu se bene gesserit*, like a Bishop. But he'd have to please me as well as pleasing Luke. For, after all, in the ultimate resort, I was master of Courtesy Court. It belonged to me, and although God knows I'd be the last person to parade the fact, or even to refer to it in Luke's or Rosanne's hearing, there might be no harm in my letting Señor Yrotavál know who was the master. Not that there was really much in the idea, as I quickly realized, for he was quite cunning enough to know that, though I might be the *de jure* master of Courtesy Court (and, were I so disposed, could make a clean sweep of him and everybody else in it), the *de facto* master was Luke, by reason of his being my brother.

Luke's blindness was the main factor of the situation; Luke, in his stricken weakness, the real master of Courtesy Court—and Yrotavál knew it.

Nevertheless, before I went, a word with Yrotavál I would have, a word of good advice, of warning, and of scarcely veiled threat.

Why threat? I asked myself. And was able quickly to answer—Because I don't trust the man; because I detest him; because I hate leaving him here with so much power in his hands; himself, indeed, the power behind the throne of the poor blind king of this little domain; because I know him for a vile, foul-minded and villainous rogue who, on his own showing, was a cur who had the currish habit of biting the hand that

fed him ; a double-crosser, badly wanted by those on both the sides that he had served.

And not only was he a treacherous villain, base and evil, but he was undeniably bold and resolute as well as intelligent, a man with the nerve and brains and guts to carry out whatever villainy his mind conceived. How could I leave a creature like that, not only in charge of Luke, but in the same house with Rosanne when I went away ?

For go I must. In a morass of uncertainty this was certain. On all grounds and for a dozen reasons, I must go. Cowardice drove me ; misery impelled me ; and, a faint and feeble will-o'-the-wisp across the morass, shone fitfully a sense of duty. For I was rested and was fit to fight again.

This, Watson, our excellent local doctor, one of those general practitioners who, from the extent and variety of their practice, become specialists of everything—quite strongly contradicted, and got the support of the distinguished nerve-specialist who came down from London periodically to see Luke. These good fellows talked about nervous lesions and strains, rest-cures, sea-voyages and what-not ; and no doubt from their point of view they were right. From mine, they were wholly wrong. What I needed was action ; absorption in constant, and preferably violent, physical occupation that, while giving me no time to think, would so tire me that I must sleep at night. Occupation I must have, if I were to gain salvation, retain my balance, carry on, behave reasonably and decently, and keep on an even keel.

I was afraid of what I might say and do, if I remained any longer under the same roof with Rosanne. To realize that I must not come between her and Luke,

must not take her away from Luke, was one thing ; but to see her with him, to see her at all, was quite another. And I was frightened by the violence and strength of the emotions that surged up in me when she kissed me good night and good morning ; put her arm through mine, or sat down beside me in our own place on the old settee.

And the unbearable pain that it gave me to watch blind Luke ; to see his pitiful brave efforts to be brave ; his clever attempts to do things for himself ; to find his way about the house ; to go to his room unguided ; to feed himself at table ; to wander about the garden that he had always loved.

God ! It made my eyes tingle when I saw him fingering the books he could not read ; feeling and stroking the favourite gun that he would never fire again, he who had so loved his shooting ; touching the wheel of the car he would never drive again ; fumbling for his pipe and tobacco and matches, filling and lighting it, and, a minute or so later, putting it down, with a little sigh for the tastelessness of unseen smoke, he who had been so fond of his pipe.

Little things, but oh, how big are little things, and gifted with what power to wring the heart.

No, I simply could not bear it, and misery joined with cowardice to send me back to the wars.

I could no longer hide from myself the fact that here was I, young, healthy, very strong, and already well-apprenticed and trained to the trade of trench-fighting ; the fact that so long as I could pass a doctor or a medical board, I had no right to be here, loafing and scrimshanking, while others were fighting for me.

It was not as though I had been badly wounded or otherwise incapacitated ; not as though I were married

or forty years of age. Our own doctor and Luke's specialist, doubtless influenced by Rosanne, said I was not yet fit to go back to it. Well, let an impartial and unbiased judge decide, a Recruiting Office doctor.

If I failed to pass him, well and good. Very well, and damned good. I would take another six months for rest and recuperation.

If I passed him, well and good also. I should be very well out of that house, and it would be a damned good thing for me to be occupied again. But I must be careful lest I find myself in some back-water of more or less leisurely training, some relatively easy way of life that would give me time for thought. I simply must not have time to think, to realize, to remember, to suffer with Luke the agony of his blindness. Not at present. Not yet. I should be able to bear it better later on, perhaps. So I wouldn't go to our very old family friend, General Sir Henry Brent-Grayleigh, and ask him to recommend me for a Commission. That would mean at least six months of O.T.C. training work, with a certain amount of evening and weekend leisure. Nor did I feel that I should, after six months, have the knowledge, experience and ability to warrant my taking an officer's responsibilities and having the lives of good men dependent on me. The very best man in every unit must be its officer, and the men must know it. I had seen officers from below, heard how their men spoke of them, seen how they regarded them and judged them; and I knew that, for a man to be a good officer, he must have his men's respect for his superior knowledge, experience, training and ability. His resolution and courage must at least equal theirs, and to do so they must be great. To exceed theirs they must be remarkable. But there

must be no question whatever as to the officer being infinitely the men's superior in all the arts of war. They must realize and admit that their leader is in every way fit to lead them, in every way the best man among them.

I knew perfectly well that, in my own Company of the Legion, I should have been entirely unfit to command and lead those magnificent fighting-men, and I had no reason to suppose that I was, at present at any rate, fit to command and lead Englishmen.

I decided, therefore, that I would again enlist as a private soldier.

The next question was the arm and the unit. Obviously Infantry, as I was a trained infantryman, and if I enlisted in the gunners or cavalry, most of my training would be wasted. As to what Infantry unit, it seemed to me that a Guards Battalion was indicated. Why were they admittedly the best infantry regiments in the British Army? Because of their superior discipline, smartness and efficiency. And what did this superiority indicate but more, longer, and harder work; more intensive training? And it was work, constant thought-killing, mind-dulling work that I needed.

The Guards it should be, if they would have me; and, inasmuch as I was not Scots nor Irish nor Welsh, the Grenadier Guards appeared to be indicated.

I would offer myself at their Recruiting Office and let their doctor be the arbiter of my fate.

§ 3

Having come to this decision, I felt better—less cowardly, less miserable, and no longer the victim of a sense of dereliction of duty.

I would go almost at once ; just as soon as the specialist had again reported on Luke ; but I would first have my final interview with Yrotavál. And with Rosanne. That I really dreaded. Whatever self-control was left to me, whatever manhood and self-respect remained, must help me to say good-bye to her without saying anything else. That she loved me dearly and that she had always done so, I knew. I lacked the self-conceit to think that she would respond in kind if I threw off my—what shall I say . . . brotherliness—and told her I loved her, worshipped her ; and begged her to marry me. But it was possible that she loved me as much as she did Luke, and Luke as much as she did me, and that the one of us who “ made love ” to her first would marry her. If it were possible, it was a possibility that I must not risk, for it would be a kind of stealing. It would be horrible ; it would be taking advantage of Luke’s blindness ; winning her behind his back, so to speak.

But of course, if I spoke words of love—love of that sort—she would not listen. If I poured out love before her, at such a time and under such conditions, she would be shocked, even if she had been disposed to love me.

So I dreaded saying good-bye to Rosanne even more than parting with Luke.

The morning after my decision I went into the library, seated myself at the big writing-table, and sent for Yrotavál. I would treat him as a servant, keep him standing while I spoke to him, and try to put into him—if not the fear of God—the fear of me and of losing his job.

He came in, closing the door behind him gently,

treading softly, and conducting himself as the discreet servant and trained valet. Among other things he was a good actor. It was wonderful how quickly he had changed, adapting himself to his new rôle. Even his speech had, like his manners, improved enormously. There were only traces of his Cockney and East Side idiom and accent ; and visitors to the house, who saw him with Luke, imagined him to be an ordinary Continental courier-valet and confidential servant.

But the leopard cannot change his spots, nor could Yrotavál his face, his shiftily wicked eye and steel-trap mouth.

" You sent for me, Señor Tuyler ? " he said, bowing and standing in the deferential attitude of the well-trained servant, everything perfect save for the faintly ironical gleam in the eye and flickering smile on the thin lips.

" Yes. I'm going away, Yrotavál, and . . . "

" Not back to the Legion ? *M' Carben Diu !* Don't you be no bloody . . . "

This was a lapse. The real Yrotavál peeped through the veneer. There was nothing of the imperturbable impassive servant about the start and quick question.

" I will do the talking, Yrotavál," I interrupted, and stared him out, until his eyes dropped. " Don't forget you are a servant here, and that a servant you will be until you go. Understand me ? "

" *Sí, Señor.* "

" I am going away to-morrow or the next day, and may not be back for some while. Miss Van Daten will, of course, be in whole and sole and complete charge of this house, and although you will be Mr. Luke's servant, you will be entirely under her orders. "

" But, *Señor*, if . . . "

"No 'if' about it. Miss Van Daten will be absolute mistress here, and in the unlikely event of her orders differing from any that Mr. Luke may give you, it is her orders that you will obey—if you wish to remain here. Understand me?"

The restless reptilian eyes flickered up, darted a look into mine and fell again.

"*Sin duda, Señor.* Without doubt, I quite understand. Sure thing. Mr. Luke's orders are to be disregarded and . . ."

"Listen, Yrotavál, and watch your step. You will do exactly as Mr. Luke tells you. You will be his servant and nothing else; and you will behave as a servant should. If Miss Van Daten sends for you and says '*I don't think Mr. Luke ought to be allowed to do such-and-such a thing,*' or '*I want Mr. Luke to do such-and-such a thing,*' you will give her every help in your power, and make it your business to see that her wishes are carried out. Understand?"

"*Si, Señor.*"

"Of course, should Miss Van Daten send for you and say '*Yrotavál, you are in the habit of doing such-and-such a thing. I don't like it,*' you will never do it again. Or if she gives you an order such as '*Go up to London to-morrow and bring me this or that,*' you will go. In other words, you will absolutely obey Miss Van Daten, and do your utmost to please her in every way. If you wish to stay here, that is. Do you?"

"*Sin duda, Señor . . . Por Cierto! . . .* Sure thing. I wanna stay with Mr. Luke . . . always."

"Well, that is the only way you'll do it, then. For I give you my solemn promise, Yrotavál, that if I get one word of complaint from Miss Van Daten, I'll make it my business to come back here, *pronto*, and

turf you out—on your ear, and ack over tock. . . . Got it ? ”

The suddenly raised eyes again shot a look into mine and a leathery-looking tongue darted like a snake's across the thin lips.

“ *Si, Señor.* I get you.”

“ Good. We understand each other, then. Don't forget. You may go.”

And with a glance that had nothing in it whatever of humility or acquiescence, no faintest suggestion of the trained and respectful servant, Yrotavál turned and went from the room—leaving me anything but satisfied about him.

§ 4

I had said nothing definite to Rosanne on the subject of my immediate plans. Time enough to tell her what I was going to do, when I was going to do it.

After we had seen Luke to his room, on what was to be my last night before going to London to enlist, I asked her to come along and have a talk with me before she went to bed.

“ I wish he wouldn't lock himself in at night,” she said as we sat on our favourite settee in front of the fire in the hall. “ He *will* do it.”

“ He oughtn't to,” I agreed. “ Suppose he were suddenly taken ill, and we couldn't get in there to him. Supposing there were a fire. Yrotavál sleeps in the next room, but it would take time to break Luke's door down, if there were need. Suppose he fell asleep in bed, with a lighted cigarette in his hand . . . I'll try to talk him out of it,” I promised.

"I've done my best," said Rosanne, "but he simply won't hear of it. I suppose it is—what's the word . . . when you feel you must be alone? Not only alone but safe in a place of your own where no one can get at you. It's a phobia. I know—agoraphobia."

"Yes," I agreed, "I've heard the word."

"It's the opposite of claustrophobia," supplied Rosanne. "That's the fear of being enclosed, trapped, isn't it? One can quite understand Luke suffering from agoraphobia, after living perpetually in public, so to speak, always with a crowd, night and day."

"Yes, and as he was hating life in the trenches like hell, and in the so-called rest-billets, which were nearly as bad, one can understand his being 'struck like it,' so to speak, when the bomb got him," I agreed.

"Yes, poor Luke," murmured Rosanne. "Never a moment's privacy, from the day he enlisted till the day he reached here. Barracks, trains, marches, trenches, billets, hospital; no wonder he has an absolute craving for privacy, and insists on locking his door. I suppose it is what psychologists would call symbolic."

We sat silent a while.

"It is dangerous, nevertheless," she mused. "Do you know what I think I'll do? Have a ladder fixed from his window to the ground."

"What, a sort of fire-escape?"

"Yes. A sort of staircase. Iron, with a hand-rail. There could be a little railed platform just outside his window, and in an emergency he could get out and go down the stairs—just as he does alone inside the house."

"Oh, I don't know that all that is necessary," I said. "A fixed ladder, by all means. It would be perfectly

easy for him to use it. He'll get accustomed to doing all sorts of things like that, poor chap."

And I could scarcely speak as I visualized the things he'd have to learn to do.

"If we made a real permanent external-staircase of it, he'd probably object as strongly as he does to having his door locked."

"Yes. But I must do something about it or I shan't sleep in peace, with him behind that locked door . . . *blind* . . ."

A silence fell between us.

"I'm off to-morrow, Rosanne," I said, after a while.

"Up to town?"

"Yes."

"For how long?"

"I don't know. I'm going to enlist in the Guards, if they'll have me."

"*Mark! . . . Oh! . . .*"

Rosanne began to cry, a thing I hadn't seen her do thrice in all the years I had known her.

"Oh, Mark, you *mustn't*," she sobbed. "You're not fit . . . Sorry, snivelling like this. But it is the last straw. Mark, I can't carry on if . . . *Must* you, Mark?"

"Yes."

"Oh, God! Mark, I . . ."

And then, visibly, brave Rosanne pulled herself together.

"You must if you must, Mark. But, oh . . ."

I steeled myself not to gather her into my arms. Luke wanted her. And who knew better than I what it was to want Rosanne? Luke needed her. And who knew better than I what it was to need Rosanne?

And though he could not want her more than I did, he needed her a thousand times more.

Inevitably she must love Luke, with his wondrous charm, beauty and wit, more than she loved me. I could not be such a cur as even to *try* to compete with him . . . But if I stayed there another minute with Rosanne beside me, her arm through mine . . .

"Good night, my dear," I said, and rose to my feet.

"Good night, Mark," she said.

That night I did not kiss her. I couldn't. Not in a brotherly way.

§ 5

Next morning I went to say a last good-bye to Luke. He was still in bed, and I thought he was looking better, but it wrung my heart again when he put out his hand to take mine and missed it. I could have kicked myself for my clumsiness.

"Where are you going?" he asked.

"For a sojer," said I.

He shot up in bed.

"Not back to the . . .?"

"No. To support Home Industries. Bold British Grenadier."

"Good Lord! Sir Henry got you a commission?"

"No. Going to trail a pike."

"Good God! I say. What, '*Quo Fas and Gloria duck-hunt*'?"

"Yes. Or '*Try a juncter in—you know.*'"

He smiled. "I say, Mark, come back safe and all that. I don't want to inherit. We don't want me blind-man's-buffing at Courtesy Court."

"I'll come back. Under the *alias* of Bad Penny,

Esquire," I said. "Good-bye, Luke. Keep a . . . Keep your pecker up. You'll . . ."

I met his blind eyes and hurried from the room.

I tried to avoid saying good-bye to Rosanne in private and alone, but she defeated this. Taking my arm and drawing me into her morning-room, she shut the door and faced me. She had no faintest idea of how hard she was making it for me.

Putting her hands on my shoulders, she raised her face to mine.

"Mark," she said. "*Mark . . .*"

I am not an emotional man, I trust ; but I found it difficult to say anything. Indeed there was nothing to say.

As we held each other thus, without kiss and without embrace, it seemed to me that her eyes tried to speak words that her lips did not say.

Should I tell her that I understood that she and Luke . . .

"*Mark! . . . Mark! . . .* Kiss me good-bye, then."

I kissed Rosanne a quick good-bye and went.

X

WHAT I write now is not in criticism of the intensive war-time training-system of our truly magnificent Guards' Battalions, but of foul War and its vile compulsions and necessities.

I have no hesitation in saying that I found *depôt* life in the Guards harder than in the French Foreign Legion at Toulon. Whether it was because the Volunteers there received preferential treatment and had an easier time than the ordinary *légionnaire* who gets his training at the *depôt* at Sidi-bel-Abbès, I don't know, but I do know most definitely that I found recruit-training at the *depôt* more thorough, more strenuous, more violent, than at Toulon. I found the Drill Instructors much more aggressive, harsh and strict. I would say more brutal but for the fact that they probably only seemed more brutal because their curses, objurgations and insults were uttered in English; and an insult in one's own language is infinitely more—insulting—than one uttered in a foreign language. It is a case in point that "*sale cochon*" seemed little more than a term of endearment, but "stinking bloody swine" seemed much more or less.

If a French Sergeant told me in his own tongue that to gaze upon my face must always have given pain to my mother, I was in no wise offended; but

I did not like it when a huge ruffian with suffused countenance and bristling moustache stuck his coarse and brutish face close to mine and roared aloud that of all the things my mother ever dropped, I was the filthiest.

One of course told oneself, trained oneself, to take no notice of any noises that came out of Drill Instructors' mouths, save military orders ; to ignore insults ; to regard oneself as above and beyond verbal hurt from these people. But it was difficult. And, at first, their appalling oaths and foul epithets got one down.

Some of the Drill Instructors were worse than others—which I suppose implies that some were better. But I came to the conclusion that the whole abominable business was part of the system, the definite policy of breaking before making ; of crushing the raw material, that it might be pressed into the mould ; or, to change the metaphor, of harrowing (*harrowing*, my God !) and clearing the soil that the ground might be prepared for the sowing of the good seed, the dragons' teeth of Cadmus.

Beside the breaking-in-order-to-make aspect of the system, there was also that of breaking now what might otherwise break later ; unnatural selection, so to speak ; and the survival of the fittest.

Yes, it was a harder life than that of the French Foreign Legion *bleu*.

I did not positively enjoy the eternal shining of ration-tins, the scrubbing of floors, the scouring of tables, the black-leading of grates ; nor demand more than I got of latrine fatigue, cook-house fatigue, nor other bristle-broom, scrubbing-brush, mop and swab fatigues ; but I hated the parade-ground drill and the

eternal cursing, blustering and bullying of louts whose Lance-Corporal stripe gave them power to hurt, injure, humiliate and degrade, as well as to instruct in squad-drill and the use of the rifle.

Oh, that rifle! At Toulon I had been through a pretty small-grinding mill and liked it, but there were times in England when I could almost have wept when, for the hundredth time, we were made to,

“*Slap* it, you b—— b——s! *Hit* it. Break the b—— stock—or bust your b—— hands, but *slap* it! *Hit* it! Hit it as b—— hard as you b—— well can, you herring-gutted tripe-hounds. Hit it till you *bleed*.”

That I had been in the trenches and had fought in many battles (which the Lance-Corporal had not done) was as nothing beside the ability to slap the rifle with sufficient force if not to break it, at least to make my hand bleed. It was not sufficient that one should make one's hand “tell” on the rifle when bringing it to the *present*. One must hit it, literally, with all one's strength. Presumably, the more violently one could slap one's rifle when doing the manual, the more efficient a defender of one's native shores would one become.

Nor was it only foul language that we had to suffer. I was amazed, literally astounded, when I saw a Drill-Sergeant strike a man on parade. Not a push, a shove, or an unpleasantly over-playful prod in the chest, but a violent blow in the face. This was, of course, utterly illegal, and was never done within sight of an officer or the Regimental Sergeant-Major. But there were fifty-five minutes in every hour in which any Instructor was not within sight of an officer or the Regimental Sergeant-Major.

And if the act were utterly illegal, why was not the Law invoked? Because there was no man fool enough to invoke it—and the literally fatal enmity of every Drill-Instructor, Sergeant, Corporal, and Lance-Corporal at the depôt.

One fool, less foolish than to report a foul-mouthed diabolically insulting brute of a Corporal who struck him, struck back; and in the blow was the pent-up hatred and resentment of days and weeks and months. It was a noble blow. The man must have been a trained boxer, for when "with sense of wrong and outrage desperate" he struck at last, he knocked the Corporal senseless and fractured his jaw.

I have often wondered what became of him when he completed his prison sentence.

§ 2

I am not complaining and I am not accusing.

The proof of the pudding is in the eating, and the proof of the excellence of the system is in the super-excellence of the discipline, smartness and terrific military efficiency of a Guards Battalion. That a system of brutality and terror is the best for turning a mob of men into a magnificent military machine is only one more unnecessary comment upon the villainy and monstrosity of War, that most abominable of all insane human activities; and the person who complains and accuses, should complain of War and accuse the makers of War. It is childish folly to blame Military Authorities because a system of brutality and terror is the best system that can be found for making men brutal and terrific, turning men into trained professional killers.

It will at once be objected by the ignorant that more can be done by gentleness, kindness, and encouragement than by roughness, strictness, and driving carried to the point of brutality and terror. So it would for any other purpose than War—and that is War's condemnation. The highest killing returns are obtained by the best-made killing-machine ; and, in the turning of gentle kindly men into killing-machines, gentleness and kindness have no place.

All of which aside, I should be a fool and an ingrate to complain because the Guards gave me what I went for—work to the limit of human capacity ; constant endless drill and training, so intensive that the long day was a solid block of tiring work, the short night a solid block of tired sleep.

Some Drill-Instructors, Sergeants and Corporals were less violent, brutal and menacing than others ; and I am afraid that the honest truth is that these men were less successful than those whose one idea of recruit-shaping and soldier-making was the use of terror, shock, brutal insult and savage threat. These men seemed to live in a state of overwhelming military wrath, irrepressible bitter contempt, and savage rage at finding themselves asked to make men, much less soldiers, of what they regarded as the pitiable human offal given them as material.

We liked and admired the occasional kindlier Sergeant ; and we feared, with a pitiful shrinking as of beaten hounds, the more efficient ones. And alas, for these latter we struck our rifles the harder, “ jumped to it ” more swiftly, drilled ever more energetically, and worked more desperately. And by this undeniable fact the system is justified and proven for its purpose of making slayers.

War is hell. The most disciplined unit does best in war. Perfect discipline must be absolutely mechanical. Violence, brutality and terror are the best agents for making men mechanical; for turning thinking, reasoning, and decent men into iron machines.

The best material were the men of most strength and least intelligence; outdoor manual workers; unskilled labourers accustomed to long hours of hard and heavy work, such as navvies, dockers, field-workers, porters and men of that type. Not only were such men accustomed to great physical effort, but were devoid of nerves, and better able to stand the monotony, the mechanical pettiness of the life, and the absence of mental exercise and relaxation. Even for these men, the life was very hard; but it was infinitely harder for the educated men of the black-coated professions, who were unaccustomed to the strenuous muscular life, for they suffered both physically and mentally. I was more than sorry for the clerks, musicians, writers, lawyers, artists, students and such people. I was particularly sorry for a splendid youngster named Rawlinson who had come straight from Cambridge and who died under the strain. He was killed on the Barrack Square, but he died for England as much as any man who was killed in a Flanders trench.

Yes, during the War, it was definitely a much harder life of far stricter discipline and more intensive training than that of the French Foreign Legion, but the aims and ideals of those respectively responsible were different. For the Guards, the uttermost ultimate polish and finish of perfect mechanical smartness and precision that inevitably connotes discipline. For the

Legion, endurance, endurance and again endurance ; gallantry, initiative and *élan*, with repressive iron discipline expressed in harsh punishment for military offence.

In the Guards there were tremendous *esprit de corps* and intense nationalism as well as patriotism, with the " Bill Browns " (Tommy Atkins becomes Bill Brown in the English Guard Battalions), the " Jocks," the " Micks " and the " Taffies," each perfectly certain that the men of his Regiment are superior to those of the others.

But before a Bill Brown, Jock, Mick or Taffy could be turned into the perfect Guardsman, confident, aggressive and swaggering, he had to be bullied and brow-beaten until he was broken and cowed, that he might be re-made on the new model ; drilled to breaking-point and drilled again ; drilled until the only impulses that his mind could feel, the only calls that it could hear, came from the Drill-Instructor ; and he was the complete robot.

And all this suited me finely.

The mere physical hardship of it, bed, board, housing, fatigues and so forth, were luxury compared with what I had been through in the trenches ; and the endless drills, exercises, classes and marches gave me no time to think, no time to suffer.

While hating every aspect of the system and deploring its necessity, I was grateful to it. My mind was so dulled, my thoughts so confused, my sensibilities so blunted, that I lived in a curious state of " being about to " ; being about to suffer rather than suffering ; being about to think of Luke and the horror of his tragic life, rather than actually thinking ; being

about to realize that I could but rarely see Rosanne again, scarcely ever stay with her, and never again live under the same roof. For, apart from the fact that I was far too desperately in love with her to be able to do this, I had not the courage and endurance to bear the sight of Luke blind . . . fumbling . . . broken. . . .

When thoughts of Luke and Rosanne came to me by day, they were very promptly driven out by the urgency of action, the necessity of straining every nerve to pay the utmost closest attention. For it is not until a thinking man has been killed and an unthinking machine has been made, that the resultant product can work mechanically.

And at night, physical fatigue mercifully dulled mental suffering ; and between waking and sleeping there was no twilight borderland.

§ 3

After a few months of this drastic kill-or-cure, make-or-break intensiveness of training, the awkward-squads of recruits coalesced into a company of trained soldiers, and was transferred to battalion barrack-life in London. And, after further training, there occurred, one day, a small event of great significance. Red strips of cloth, on which the name of the regiment was embroidered in white letters, were issued to those men whose names had appeared in a list headed with the familiar formula :

"The following are warned to be in readiness to proceed overseas."

On this list in due course appeared my name. Forthwith the scarlet tabs were sewn below the shoulder-

straps of my tunic and I was marked as sacrifice acceptable to the Red God of War.

My first thought was that this would mean a brief spell of pre-embarkation leave, and an opportunity to go home and say good-bye to Rosanne and Luke, as it was rather more than probable that I should never see them again. Expectation of life at the Front in the Guards was not at that period high—not nearly as high as expectation of death.

Should I go home or not? Could I see Rosanne again without making love to her—to use an expression I detest? Did I dare to see Luke again? Certainly I could not see him and then ask the woman whom he loved to marry me.

But no leave was granted, and to this day I do not know whether I should have gone home if I had been able to do so.

XI

“**B**ACK to the trenches again, Sergeant.” A raw recruit with more trench-fighting experience than most of the veterans.

Once again I will resist the temptation to let this account of my part in Luke's tragedy develop or degenerate into another war book. Suffice it to say that life in the trenches with the Guards differed mainly from that with the French Foreign Legion in the fact that I was now serving with a purely working-class British Regiment and not with one composed of men from every walk of life and almost every country in the world ; and secondly, in the fact that we were treated with more humanity, that is to say, more humanly and humanely, and as though our lives were of some value and account to our officers.

We were far better fed, far better looked after, and, when sick or wounded, received much greater care and attention. But Death noticed little difference between us and the *légionnaires*, feared not to blunt his scythe, and mowed among expensive guardsmen as freely as among mere ha'penny-a-day *légionnaires*.

I was now better off and worse off ; better because I did not suffer the constant strain of worrying about Luke, hourly expecting to see him killed or mangled ; worse off in that I had this constant ghastly spectre lurking at the back of my mind and ever ready to

spring to the front, the knowledge that the worst or almost the worst had already happened. Perhaps in a way, knowledge of the worst is not so bad as its anticipation.

Being absolutely indifferent to whether I were killed or not, if, in point of fact, my taste did not lean perhaps to the side of a quick death, I was spared where so many were taken, survived innumerable hot encounters and became something of a joke or by-word among my comrades as *The Man the Devil Doesn't Want*, and among our officers as *The Immortal*.

It was considered to be a safe bid that if I was sent out on a raid or night-reconnoitring expedition, I should return, if only as the sole survivor, a thing which happened several times.

Partly because trenches were now vastly improved and trench life better organized, partly because we were so much better fed, clothed and cared for, my health remained good, and though I was still aware of a certain mental numbness, a kind of living in a state of suspension or in a vacuum, I was not wholly and always wretched and depressed, nor what might be described as perpetually miserable. I did my best to live the life of my comrades, but found it difficult, inasmuch as we had so little in common—which was my loss. As I have said, it was a purely working-class battalion, every man of education having been promoted and given a commission—an offer which I received and declined. The “*Bill Browns*” who remained in the ranks were ignorant, uneducated, stupid men of incredibly narrow outlook and interest, and very many of them amazing by-products of our system of free and compulsory education. Let me hasten to add that they were splendid fellows, the salt

of the earth, staunch and sound, solid and reliable. They had their code of honour, and, albeit a different one from that of the officers, they observed it as strictly as the officers did theirs.

I admired them and loved them, was unfeignedly proud to be accepted by them—and lived among them utterly alone.

§ 2

I did not know whether we were winning the War on the Western Front, but the Germans seemed to be making a frantic effort to win it on our Home Front. Gothas were now over London, as well as Zeppelins.

I could sympathize most deeply with the terrific indignation, felt by my comrades, at this bombing of civilian homes, with its accompanying slaughter of women and children. How ridiculous such scruples seem nowadays, when it is the recognized pastime of poetic young heroes. Many of the "Bill Browns" were London men, and although immune to the horrors of their own war, they were aghast at the thought that their little homes, their wives and children, might be blown to bits.

For one unhappy day of bitter east wind and driving rain, I received a letter the contents of which put me utterly and wholly *d'accord* with them and deepened my savage sympathy, for in it Rosanne tersely told me that Athene, bright-plumaged happy bird of (earthly) Paradise, had been killed by a bomb; happily—she died, since stricken she had to be, for her beautiful body was torn and mangled, and she would have been a cripple for life, maimed, ugly and deformed.

I am somewhat ashamed now to think that my

reaction was an increase of the burning resentment that I felt against the Germans, an increased desire to kill and kill and kill, preferably with a bayonet, the men who had blinded my brother and killed poor beautiful Athene who had been so kind. It was an utterly irrational hatred, for these Germans were but soldiers like myself, doing their noble duty of slaying their fellow-men, just as I myself was. On the other hand, the German Army was the German people in arms, and the people wanted the war, acclaimed it from the house-tops, cheered it spontaneously, marched to it singing songs of joy and gladness with flowers on their rifles. But, of course, they had been misled by a governed Press and lies about Germany's encirclement and her danger from the dark machinations of evil Belgium, wicked France and menacing Serbia.

At times I am still ashamed: at others I am not, when I think that those same Germans would again to-day consent to death while conquering agony—the death of millions and the agony of millions, including their own—should a house-painter's patience be exhausted! God give me patience when I think of it.

So Athene, about her Red Cross work, was butchered.

I was glad I was a Battalion marksman and a sniper.

§ 3

With unexpected rapidity I was growing a shell and living inside it, as does a tortoise or a snail. Perhaps I was also becoming mentally as slow as these recluse individualists. This condition of calloused sensibilities may have stood me in good stead when, after being cut off from our postal delivery for some days, I received

two letters, one from Rosanne and one from Luke, announcing that they were about to marry.

I had expected it, of course, but the impact of the blow was not greatly lessened by this. The fact that one expects to be shot does not lessen the shock when the bullet strikes. It was, of course, by far the best thing that could happen to Luke. He would not only have someone to look after him for the rest of his life, but that someone would be the person whom, above all others, he would desire to have as his constant companion. She would be not only his wife, his lover, and his nurse, but his medicine, his cure, the perfect cure for everything but his blindness. Dr. Abernethy had seen it, had hinted at its being the best thing that could possibly happen. What was it he had said? I should remember, for it had so hurt me at the time :

"Miss Van Daten knows what to do—I think."

Of course it was the obvious and perfect solution of Luke's ghastly problem, and would be his salvation and cure of all but—the incurable. I could almost hear poor Luke's infinitely sad and bitter voice murmuring,

"That's all. Only blindness. Cured of all but that trifle." But no, I wronged him, and should be ashamed of myself. His heart would leap for joy, and he would be so happy that he'd feel precisely as I should have done myself in such circumstances. Better blind with Rosanne than have perfect sight without her. What else was worth looking at?

But I prayed that it would be impossible for me to attend the wedding. Almost certainly it would be impossible, for they would be married soon. What reason was there for waiting? The only thing that

could set me free to attend the wedding, in the present condition of affairs at the Front, would be a Blighty wound or the outbreak of Peace. Even so, I did not feel that I could go through with it. Let anyone who cannot understand this, wait till he loves a woman absolutely and for always, with a love so consuming that life without her is something devoid of interest, a matter that is neither here nor there nor anywhere else, and can be spent in a coal-mine, on a desert island, as a soldier, a sailor, a beauty-chorus boy or an all-in wrestler, in wealth, or poverty, or anyhow else. Let him, I say, love a woman like that, and then propose to attend her wedding to his twin-brother, or rather the shattered wreck of that other-self.

Luke's letter wrung my heart. That is a trite and silly *cliché* and perfectly accurate. The pain I had was that of an iron hand grasping, twisting, and crushing my heart; for he had typed the letter himself, with many mistakes. I could repeat it to-day, every word of it from beginning to end, but prefer not to do so. It was a fine brave letter, resigned and stoical, while gallant and humorous—and dreadful.

Nevertheless, it was obvious that, so far as happiness could come to such a man in such a state, he was happy at the thought that Rosanne so loved him that she could marry him in spite of his hideous handicap; in spite of his being, as he described himself, "a sheer hulk; a blind mouth; a tuppenny Samson in Gaza who had been a man in Israel."

I was glad that he realized that Rosanne must love him greatly and truly to be able to assume the part of what he referred to as "a blind man's dog."

There was one thing—terrible beyond imagination as it must be for an artist who lived mainly through

his eyes, to be for ever sightless, to be for ever in need of a blind man's dog—there would never be the necessity for the dog to carry a tin money-box for alms. Rosanne would be very rich now, and one thing that Luke would not suffer, who suffered all things else, was poverty.

As things had been up to the time of Athene's death, Luke, like myself, had very little money, and that only pocket-money. Courtesy Court was not self-supporting, and, until my father married Athene, money had been definitely tight. But for his marriage, we should only with difficulty have gone to Oxford, and should have had to earn our livings professionally, in the open market.

Luke would doubtless have done splendidly as an artist, painting being his great gift. But now that he was blind, he would have had nothing on which to live, save what I could have given him. Now, thank God, he would be a wealthy man, would have every comfort, including the greatest of all luxuries, freedom from financial anxiety ; and in his blindness he need have no idiotic scruples about being the penniless husband of a rich woman. It was all splendid ; perfect, from Luke's point of view.

And Rosanne's ? Rosanne tied to a man who could take but little part in so full a life as such a woman as she would naturally lead ; who could join with her in none of her sports and pastimes, in none of her work and occupations ? Would she be happy ?

Of course she would ; simply because she loved him ; loved his happiness. And as for occupation, what better would she desire than that of looking after Luke ? That would constitute her happiness and be her whole-time job. Rosanne loved him, and being Rosanne,

would love him the more for his blindness ; would never, never let his dreadful handicap be a recognized drag, an admitted and resented brake on the wheels of her life.

Yes, it was for the best from the point of view of both of them, the best possible thing that could happen ; and, unless I were a base mean-hearted swine—I must rejoice.

I did not rejoice.

But I can truthfully say in self-defence that I would not have lifted a finger to have prevented it or to have beckoned Rosanne to my side, if I had had the power to do it.

A small mercy, in what was to me a somewhat unmerciful situation, was the fact that Luke and Rosanne were married at a time when all leave was cancelled, when men were scraped together from every quarter and, while none left France, all who could be spared, were being poured into the country.

So Luke and Rosanne were married.

XII

WHEN I was demobilized, there was nothing for it but to pay a visit to Courtesy Court. I longed to go there, almost as much as I feared to do so. I wanted to see my brother, even more than I dreaded the meeting with him. I knew that I must see Rosanne and that I must *not* see Rosanne.

But I owned Courtesy Court ; and all that I loved was there. To keep away when there was no ostensible reason for doing so, was to hurt both Luke and Rosanne cruelly. I could offer no excuse for not going home.

I went.

§ 2

Luke was marvellously improved, and my heart rejoiced. So wonderful had been the effect of his marriage that he was a changed man ; almost light-hearted ; so brave ; so resigned—without any air of resignation.

And so amazingly clever with his blindness. His finger-tips were as ten minor eyes, so much could he see by the sense of touch. At times, it almost seemed that he could read plain surfaces, surfaces, on which there was no embossment. To read the surface of a coin, of the back of a book, the raised print on good visiting-cards and note-paper, these things were pos-

sible ; but at times it almost seemed that he could read such things as letters on which the writing was thick and heavy, the pattern of a crest, the denomination of a stamp, things like that.

It really was amazing.

Certainly he could do marvels in the matter of appreciating form and shape, and could identify faces by means of touch. Of course, he knew people by their voices, but if a stranger were introduced, if a new maid came, Luke would always say that he would like to know what they looked like, and if they wouldn't mind his just touching their face with his finger-tips he would know.

I thought it was perhaps a form of self-protection, or reassurance.

Anyhow, he was continually surprising us with his cleverness. Though, after all, there was no reason for any uncomplimentary degree of surprise that anyone so accomplished, artistic, and sensitive as Luke should have made such an astonishing conquest of blindness.

Another small mercy was the fact that he was obviously endowed with an unusual sense of direction, and could find his way about, whether indoors or out, in a remarkable manner. Give him his stout, white-painted, steel-shod stick, and he did not seem to be blind at all. Tapping his way along with it, using it to give him warning of obstacles, while his acutely attuned ear gave notice of the approach of people or vehicles, it seemed to serve him as yet another eye. My weight of sadness was slightly lightened ; my crushing misery somewhat assuaged by the fact that my brother was coping so nobly and successfully with his cruel affliction.

To Rosanne, much of the glory and the praise ;
Rosanne whose love had saved him.

Hope for his future ? None.

At least he had none. And who should know better than he ? So far, there was not the faintest lightening of his darkness. To stare at the window on a brilliant summer day was to receive as much sense of light as he had when he sat with his black silk bandage bound tightly about his eyes.

Nor had Rosanne been able to persuade him to visit an oculist or to allow her to bring Sir Theophilus Grant to the house.

He had had enough of it, he said ; had accepted the verdict of the world-famous Renier once and for all. And Rosanne had accepted Luke's own verdict, feeling, as she told me, that it was cruel to talk of hope where there was none ; to buoy him up with a false and treacherous support that, slowly becoming water-logged, would but tend to sink him more deeply in the ocean of despair.

Faithfully he had promised to tell her if, and when, he received the very faintest hint of a sensation of light ; and he would then instantly go to any or every distinguished oculist in London. Meantime, she must leave him alone and not tantalize him with the hope deferred that maketh the sick heart yet more sick.

Brave Rosanne and braver Luke. They were facing life wonderfully.

But it was more than I could do. Some day, perhaps, but not now. And not at Courtesy Court. For a while I must rest, and then I must go. Whither and to do what, God alone knew.

XIII

YES, I must go. I must leave this nightmare of delirious happiness and torture. I must have the strength and courage to leave Rosanne's presence, the weakness and cowardice to turn my back on Luke, the sight of whose brave agony I could not much longer bear. How and when and whither were my constant questions and preoccupation, my insoluble problems. How could I go without hurting and offending Rosanne who was so thankful that I had come ; who told me I was a tower of strength to her ; who declared that she did not know how she had carried on without my help ; who was so happy in my company, and who constantly assured me that Luke also was the happier for my being at Courtesy Court.

It was obvious that, like most women, Rosanne hated ultimate responsibility ; the feeling that she had no support, and must be self-sufficient. To manage Courtesy Court would have been her delight under normal conditions, with a husband to give her authority, strength and power ; a man to whom she could refer every problem, doubt, and difficulty with which she could not cope alone.

As it was, she had as much responsibility as though she were unmarried, and the owner of Courtesy Court ; for she was still in sole charge of it, of course, as she had been in my absence.

What she would have liked and considered the ideal solution was that I should remain at Courtesy Court, its owner and master ; that she should be its chatelaine and mistress ; and that the welfare of Luke, her husband and my brother, should be our joint care. Part of her day she would always devote to him ; part of mine I would always spend in his company. With me to be the man-friend and companion ; she the woman-friend and nurse ; and with Yrotavál to valet him, his life should be as happy as that of a blind man can be.

But it was a dream that I must shatter.

And when she spoke of Yrotavál, I could see that some small part of her joy at my coming concerned him. She made no actual accusation or complaint, but she did, when describing her ideal programme for our joint lives, say,

“ And you'll be here to deal with Yrotavál. Oh, how I wish Luke would bring himself to get rid of that man. But he won't hear of it, and I hate to press the point because he is so dependent on him. Time after time I have told him he can get somebody just as efficient, and a great deal more acceptable in the house ; but he only says that Yrotavál is efficient enough and to him entirely acceptable. . . . And after all, that is the main point. It would be horribly selfish, as well as a great mistake, to dismiss the man while Luke feels like that about him. Besides, I can't very well dismiss him, since Luke engaged him, and he is Luke's servant. . . . Yrotavál is in a strong position and he knows it.”

“ What have you against him ? ”

“ Nothing . . . much.”

"Well, what does he do that annoys you?"

"Makes my flesh creep."

"How? Why?"

"The way he looks at me. He insults me with his eyes. His false politeness. He obsequiously promises to do exactly as I order and never does it or intends to do it. . . . His beastly personality. Without one word that I can object to, he points out to me that what Luke says *goes*, in this house; and I somehow get it quite clearly that what Luke says is what Yrotavál wants him to say. . . . And Mark, do you know what he has done to me?"

"*Done* to you?" I sprang up.

"Yes. Done to me. What no man or woman has ever done before. He has made me a coward. I am afraid of him. I fear him as much as I hate him. And oh, how I hate him. I *hate* him!"

"Rosanne, I'll fling him out, neck and crop. I'll break his damned . . ."

"Break nothing," interrupted Rosanne. "Fling nothing. So far, and at present, it seems that he is absolutely essential to Luke. The poor boy gets into quite a state if I so much as suggest that Yrotavál . . ."

"I'll speak to him. I'll speak to both of them."

"Don't upset Luke. He's extraordinarily—well—touchy about it. Do you know—when I wasn't feeling too good, and Yrotavál had so got on my nerves that I thought I couldn't bear him in the house another day, I went and told Luke so. I don't often fly off the handle, as you know, Mark, but I did then. I felt murderous about the skunk. I said more than I meant, of course, and used the idiotic words,

“ ‘Either Yrotavál leaves this house or else I do.’ And what do you think he said?

“ ‘If Yrotavál goes, I go with him.’ ”

I was shocked ; shaken ; and a dumb, cold anger arose and grew in me. . . . Yrotavál ! By God, I’d . . . I’d . . . what—since Luke was so dependent on him ?

“ What did you say to that ? ” I asked.

“ I said the best possible thing. Nothing,” replied Rosanne. “ I can’t be too thankful that I had the sense to go out of the room. As I think you know, Mark, I don’t often get really mad, and I’m not angry for long. When I cooled down, I was more thankful than I can say, that I hadn’t let it come to a quarrel. Fancy me quarrelling with Luke ! Fancy a conscientious nurse quarrelling with a patient, a sick man ; for Luke is still mentally sick, marvellously as he bears, and copes with, his blindness. Fancy a reasonably decent self-respecting woman quarrelling with a blind man—and him her husband ! Oh, Mark, I’m so ashamed and . . . ”

I could see that Rosanne was near to tears ; Rosanne who never cried.

(‘ And ’ *what* ? What was that last word which she had not uttered ? Surely it was not ‘ *unhappy*. ’ ‘ *I am so ashamed and—* ’ What ? Not ‘ *unhappy*, ’ surely ?)

My dear good Señor Don Caballero Yrotavál y Rewes, I’ll have a reckoning with you yet. You may be in a strong position. But wait till you are out of it.

It was an impasse, but to Luke I would talk in one way and to Yrotavál in another. I’d tell Luke that

while there was no question or suggestion of Yrotavál leaving him, he must see that Yrotavál behaved himself ; that it was Yrotavál's plain duty, as well as to his interest, to make himself as indispensable, as much *persona grata*, to his mistress as to his master.

And to El Señor Don Caballero Yrotavál y Rewes I would speak a language he understood, a language at which my training in the French Foreign Legion and His Majesty's Foot-Guards had rendered me reasonably adept.

But I must not make the mistake of promising what I could not perform, uttering threats which he would know that I was unable to implement.

And what could I do to the fellow, so long as Luke declared him indispensable ? Perhaps the other tack would be better. Swallow my wrath and use promises rather than threats, promises that would be easy enough of fulfilment, such as a raised salary, a bonus, so to speak, so long as Rosanne had no complaint to make of him.

And then again, what were the complaints ? Of what was I to accuse him to Luke ?

"What shall I tell Luke that Yrotavál does to annoy you ?" I asked Rosanne.

"My dear Mark, he does nothing to annoy me. A cat may look at a king ; and a dog may look at a woman. . . . A wolfish evil dog . . . cur . . . hound. . . . Oh, how I *loathe* him."

"Look here, has he ever said one word that . . ."

"Not one word. But every word he says makes my blood boil."

"Can you tell me anything of which I can accuse him to Luke ? Anything he does or ever has done ? Something I can lay hold of. . . ."

" Nothing. He has never done a thing. It is only that everything he does makes me . . . Oh, Mark, can't you understand, it is not what he says or does, it is his . . . "

" Manners ? "

" No, manner. Atmosphere. I hate the word 'aura,' but that's it. It's the man himself. He's a reptile, poisonous, dangerous . . . *evil*. I can't *bear* him to be near me."

" Yes. Yes. I do understand, Rosanne. I understand perfectly, for he affects me rather in the same way. Always has done. But, of course, I can deal with him in a way a woman can't. I understand, my dear. But what I wanted was something that Luke would understand. Something concrete in the way of an accusation. Since he simply cannot bear the thought of parting with him, it is not much good my going to Luke and saying,

" ' Look here, I'm going to kick Yrotavál out,' and when he says,

" ' Why ? ' to reply,

" ' Oh, you know, "*I do not like thee, Doctor Fell, the reason why I cannot tell, but have the goodness to get to hell*"—*out of this.*' It would seem so unreasonable . . . Unkind to Luke."

" Exactly. Didn't I say he was in a strong position ; impregnable ? It must sound a lot of fuss about nothing."

" But it isn't ' nothing '."

" No, Mark, it isn't. And don't get the idea that I am jealous of the creature ! You wouldn't, of course ; but some people might think I was jealous of his influence over Luke and, still more, of his indispensability. I don't think it is unreasonable of me to feel a little

hurt that Luke should say that if Yrotavál went, he'd go too."

"He didn't mean that, Rosanne. Of course he didn't. You know he didn't. It was only a figure of speech. Just a way of saying how frightfully he'd miss him. One is always using exaggerations of that sort. If I told Yrotavál I was going to wring his neck, or break every bone in his body, I shouldn't actually mean that I was going to kill him, I suppose."

"Luke was serious when he said it."

"And I shall be serious when I say what I am going to say to Yrotavál. Very serious; but I shall probably use a few *façons de parler*. Luke meant that, just as much as he'd have meant it if he said,

"'Rosanna, I'm about to bite your ear and then give you a good beating.'"

"Comforting Mark! Nice Mark!" smiled Rosanne and took my hand.

I promptly withdrew it, being merely human.

"Look here," I said, as I did so, "you've been doing too much nursing and too much worrying. You've been through a dreadful time, and your nerves are all to pieces. I know how that feels, and what it can do to one. Now listen. I'm going to put Yrotavál where he belongs; tell him where he gets off; and without upsetting Luke. I'll send for him, and, speaking as the owner and master of Courtesy Court, I'll tell him that if he wants to live long and die happy, he had better watch his step."

"Live long *here*? And die happy *here*?" mused Rosanne.

"Live here at all. If he wants to stay here, he's got to please you as well as Luke."

"Yes; and he'll grin behind his face and assure you

that to please me is the one thing he lives for," said Rosanne bitterly.

"And I'll tell him he had *better* live for it, if he wants to live here. . . . Have you told him that you dislike him?"

"No, no need. He knows all right and he knows that it doesn't matter. Mark, I don't know what to do."

"I do, though."

"And there's another thing that troubles me about Luke," she went on. "I can't get *at* him, Mark. I have a horrible feeling that there is something between us. I don't mean a row, a quarrel. It's an obstacle, a wall. . . . He still locks himself in that room."

"Sleeps there?"

"Yes—whenever he feels like it. And as you know, he goes there most afternoons and almost every night, between dinner and bedtime for an hour or two, and shuts himself up. It's bad for him and it's dangerous."

"I'll have a talk with him."

"Darling Mark, you are such a . . ." and she slipped her arm through mine.

"Nothing of the sort. . . . I want my pipe," said I, and got up from the settee.

I must walk and think.

And I must go.

But before I went, I must deal faithfully with friend Yrotavál.

I ground my teeth and clenched my fists as I thought of what Rosanne had said. *El Señor Don Caballero Yrotavál y Rewes*. . . . God! I could have stamped upon his face.

§ 2

After dinner that night, we sat over our coffee and cigarettes in the hall until a visitor, our neighbour Giulia Brent-Grayleigh, went home.

Luke then retired, leaving me with Rosanne. For as long as I dared, I stayed with her, but soon made the excuse that I thought I would like a turn on the terrace before going up to bed.

I tried to bring myself to tell her that I must go ; that I was leaving Courtesy Court again ; and that I must go soon.

Once again I had procrastinated.

Standing in the door-way, I filled my pipe, lit it and strolled out into the moonlit night.

I am not a great thinker, as may be apparent, but such thinking as I do is best done while I am walking. If I walk long enough, I generally arrive at some sort of solution of whatever is troubling my mind, come to some conclusion, and settle the matter once and for all.

Whether it be habit formed by innumerable periods of sentry-go as *légionnaire* and as Guardsman, I subconsciously walk up and down when I am exercised in mind and pondering a problem. I walk up and down, to and fro, rather than go for a stroll.

Fate, Chance, or God, willed that on this occasion I should pace the terrace like a sentry on duty, save for the fact that I walked with head bent and mind abstracted. I paced the length of the side of the house sunk in a brown study, oblivious of my surroundings. How long I walked I don't know, but my absent mind was suddenly recalled to awareness, and from heavy brooding on the problem of Yrotavál, to the actual sound of his voice, raised and angry, and that

of Luke answering sharply; to the noise—it was nothing less—of an altercation.

I halted in amazement. That Luke should raise his voice to Yrotavál and tick him off was very well, very right and proper and no novelty, but that Yrotavál should not only answer him back but actually shout him down, was entirely the opposite, and something very new indeed.

So far as I knew, this was the first time, and, by God, it should be the last.

They were actually *quarrelling*!

I looked up at the lighted uncurtained window, more than twenty feet above my head, the window distinguishable as Luke's by the little platform beside the window-sill from which descended the iron staircase that Rosanne's love, anxiety, and forethought had had permanently fixed.

I would go up. The insolent hound! The snarling dog! How dare he raise his voice to Luke! Perhaps this would give me an excuse to do what I would have given anything for the power to do, to thrash the brute and throw him out—with Luke's consent. If I could step in while Luke was angry, he might agree. He might sack him himself.

Before I was half-way up the ladder, the sound of the raised and angry voices stopped suddenly.

I paused. Too late now. Yrotavál must have gone out of the room and shut the door. Heaven grant that Luke had sent him out—and with orders not to return. Out of the room and out of the house. I hung in doubt for a minute and turned to go down again. Whatever I did I must not butt in, must not give Luke the sensation he loathed above all others, that of being spied upon.

Luke's voice had fallen very suddenly. Was he all right ?

Anyway, he'd never know if I crept up very quietly and just looked in. I need not actually go on to the platform, need make no sound that would reach Luke's ears.

I would take one glance to assure myself that all was well, and then go down again.

My head came above the level of the window-sill.

I saw that Luke was reclining in his deep arm-chair, his feet raised on to the pouf which was a detachable part of it. On the book-rest attached to the side of the chair was a book, and Luke, his eyes uncovered, was reading it.

Of course he was not reading it.

Poor Luke ! He would never read again.

The pity of it, the agony of it.

He was sitting there *pretending* that he could read. Fingering a beloved book, as he sat in the black night of his blindness. Just touching and fondling the book that he could not read.

He turned a page of it ; and, as I was about to look away before my own eyes were briefly blinded, a fly settled on the page. . . .

And Luke did what I had seen him do a thousand times before, in the trenches, in the school-room, in the nursery. Slowly, gently, he raised his hand, his fingers curling. Suddenly and swiftly his hand swooped across the page of the book, closing as it did so.

Carefully opening his clenched fist, Luke took the captured fly between the finger and thumb of his other hand, looked at it, and dropped it into the ash-tray.

He then turned to his book and read on.

And as I clutched the railing of the ladder for

support, he turned the leaves back, read something on a previous page, and again resumed his reading.

Almost before I realized and accepted the horrible truth, he turned the page that he was reading.

I was trembling. I felt too ill, too weak, to move.

He was reading.

He could see.

No! Fool, fool that I was! *Devil*, to insult my brother with so base and foul a suspicion! . . . He was *pretending* to read. . . . *Playing* at reading.

And the fly?

He had heard it buzz. It was purest chance. In his blindness he must have tried a thousand times to catch a maddening fly that came near him, and once in a thousand times succeeded.

He was blind. . . .

He was blind. . . .

And better *that* than be the vile, lying, swindling, impostor that my filthy mind had dared to think him. I was unfit to live. . . .

And as I turned to go, Luke reached out, took a pencil from the table beside his chair, underlined something, and wrote a note in the margin of the page.

It was in that minute that my hair began to turn grey.

XIV

GOD knows I am no saint and the Devil knows I have no desire to be one.

For a while I was stunned.

When I had sufficiently recovered from the blow to be able to realize the incredible truth, my first sensation was one of fierce and bitter anger, my first impulse to blow Luke's edifice of lies and deceit sky-high. It was spontaneous and quite natural, I think, and free from any *arrière pensée* of benefit to myself. It was a swift repulsion, an utter revulsion of feeling—and feeling, of course, came before reason, emotion before thought; and, under the influence of emotion, I almost went straight to Rosanne.

I cannot be too thankful that I did not act in the violence of my great anger and disgust; and I owe a debt of gratitude to that discipline that had so irked me. I realize that I had cause to be thankful to those who so recently and for so long had trained me, mechanized me, so that I did not immediately act upon impulse.

Instead, trembling slightly, feeling weak and shaky in the legs, I made my way to my room, locked my door, sat down in my arm-chair, lit my pipe, and tried to think calmly, clearly, and logically; tried to give Reason a fair field, unhindered and unobstructed by Emotion.

It was not easy at first. Wrath, indignation, contempt ; a sense of most cruel hurt, disillusion, and sick disappointment, all had to be overcome and eliminated. It was a desperate struggle, but the battle was half won by the time I had reached my room, seated myself, and lighted my pipe. By then, I had got myself under control ; and I knew that if I could keep myself in that chair until I had finished my pipe, whatever I then did would be done in cold blood and not in hot anger, done in the steady light of reason and not in the fierce flickering glow of rage.

And by the time I knocked out the ashes of that memorable pipe, symbolic of the ashes of my world, I was sufficiently calm to make a decision and honestly to judge my own motives for the course of action upon which I decided in that terrible hour, by far the most important, as it was the most poignant and painful, of all my life.

And I think that, had I taken a day or a week in which to think over the situation, I should have come ultimately to the same conclusion and decision.

First of all, the feeling of anger that followed the incredulous bewilderment, the refusal to accept the evidence of my own sight.

On what was that anger based ? Was it a noble, indignant wrath, the righteous man's pure and unadulterated hatred of any deceit, swindling, trickery and baseness ?

Not it.

There was a strong element of selfishness present. I personally had been injured, and much of my anger was plain, personal resentment.

And was I angry on Rosanne's behalf ? Not wholly,

solely and genuinely. For it could be argued that he had done her no wrong, inasmuch as it gave her great pleasure to look after him, to protect him, and to stand between him and the asperities of a life of blindness. Besides loving Luke, Rosanne loved giving, loved helping ; and he had provided her with a permanent object for the exercise of her infinite capacity for giving and helping.

Secondly, what of the feelings of fierce contempt and sick disgust ?

They too were mainly selfish. By doing this perfectly incredible thing, Luke had hurt me. He had shocked me. He had disillusioned me. He had destroyed my faith in him. He had all but killed my affection for him. He had struck me the heaviest blow that I had ever received.

Yes, there it was. "*I*" and "*me*," the whole time.

And suppose that, in my pain and anger, I had denounced and exposed him. What should I have done to Rosanne who loved him so ? With my own hand I should have struck her exactly such a blow as I myself had just received. I should have inflicted upon her the kind of miserable agony which I was now enduring, similar in kind but perhaps even worse in measure—which God forbid. For it was possible that she loved him even more than I did, and it was quite certain that she was less fitted than I to withstand such a shock, to bear such an intensity of suffering. It would have been an abominably cruel thing to do, even had I acted from the purest sense of duty. And I hate those people who always find it their duty to tell the truth at any cost ; at any cost to anybody.

I loathe the type of man and woman who will never allow their friends' ignorance to be bliss ; who would never, for example, allow a mother's blissful ignorance of a son's misdeed to remain undisturbed ; would always find it their duty to open the eyes of a husband to the truth and fact of some error of his wife's, or *vice versa*.

I had recently, and for long, been in contact with the type of man whose chief joy in life is the catching of his fellow-man in some alleged fault of omission or commission ; who goes about looking for trouble—for other people ; who thoroughly enjoys the noble sport of catching-out. Personally I hate catching people out. I would far sooner be caught myself. Wrong-doing has to be punished, we know, but I should never, in any circumstances, find any pleasure in the rôle of the discoverer of wrong-doing. . . . No, to expose my brother to his wife would be an utterly beastly thing to do, and mine a loathsome part to play.

By the time my pipe was cold, the fires of my anger were cold, and it was perfectly clear to me that, rather than expose Luke's deceit, I should do everything I could to hide it, because the blow to a woman like Rosanne, so honest and straightforward, so trusting and unsuspecting, might have a terrible personal effect, quite apart from its result upon her married happiness, to which it would, of course, be simply fatal.

If I knew my Rosanne—and who knew her if I did not—she would be so angry, so resentful of the cruel joke that Luke had played on her, so enraged at his abominable trick, that she would never forgive him. Rosanne did not suffer fools gladly, and still less

gladly would she suffer one who fooled her. Among Rosanne's virtues, meekness was not the most prominent. She was extremely good-tempered and even-tempered, but a temper she had, and when it was justly aroused, it was a warm and a strong one. Like many people who are splendid friends, she could be a redoubtable enemy ; and few things would arouse her enmity like trickery, deceit, humbug, and false pretence.

She would never forgive him. Never. She would, at first, feel positively murderous toward him ; and it would be the end of their married life. In other words, the end of her happiness. Her marriage would be wrecked, her life spoilt. For how could she go on living with him when once she knew the truth ?

It was the sort of thing which would affect Rosanne's mind and nature ; which would, in turn, affect her body and make her ill—if only by killing her trust in all mankind, her faith in human nature. (" Only " !)

That lovely, simple mind, so forthright, honest, trusting, so apt for hero-worship, would henceforth be warped and twisted. There would be a danger of her becoming as cynical as I now felt myself to be.

Imagine Rosanne, of all people in this world, becoming suspicious, sceptical, distrustful of Life, through a mean and selfish act of mine !

And again Luke himself. What would be the effect upon him—sensitive, self-centred perhaps, intolerant of accusation and criticism ? I did not see how he could possibly go on living after the exposure ; how he could permit himself to survive it.

The blow which I had received on discovering his imposture would be lighter than the one which he would receive on learning of the discovery. Its result would

be terrible, and would do him the utmost possible harm. It would be a mortal wound, not only to his pride and self-esteem but to his very self. It would kill him. And if it did not, he would commit suicide. A nice thing for me, his brother, to drive him to his death. I should feel that I had murdered him. I should indeed have murdered him.

And from an angry and resentful

"Serve him right. He needs punishment. The more severe it is, the more good it will do him," I came gradually to an entirely opposite conclusion. Not only because I saw the expediency of refraining from denouncing him, but because, as I grew calmer, affection came back to the hurt mind from which it had been driven. Surely if anybody could understand, it was I, I who knew him better than anybody else ; and, moreover, I, who had been through that same hell of suffering that had tortured him into doing this. This shameful trickery and imposture was, after all, only his way of escape from a world and a situation that had become too much for him. It was symbolic. It was like protective colouring. Quite probably it had been begun on the spur of the moment, on impulse, with no other thought or intention than to escape immediately from what was killing him, escape from what he could no longer bear.

And another idea occurred to me. Inasmuch as he had done it after being blown up and buried alive, driven almost to lunacy and to death, it was a direct result, a definite symptom, of the appalling mental illness known as shell-shock—and sometimes derided by those who have never seen or heard a shell.

He would never have done it but for that shattering

concussion. He had begun it while suffering from shock ; and, realizing that he could not possibly return to those or any other trenches and retain his sanity, he had kept up the deception.

If I exposed him, he would feel that he must flee—and never come back.

Hour after hour I sat and thought, thrashed the matter out in all its dreadful details.

Having sat so long and got so far upon the road to unbiased reason, I would go further yet ; sit all night ; completely calm down ; see the matter with the clear eyes of quiet disinterested reflection, crush every angry impulse, feeling of resentment and bitterness ; thrust away from me the thought that he had won Rosanne under false pretences ; had made, with his sham blindness, an appeal which she could not refuse. I would try to understand that, if I had suffered, he would suffer far more than I had, if I exposed him ; admit that my loss of my hope of Rosanne would be as nothing to compare with his loss of Rosanne herself. For lose her he would, if she knew what he had done.

Exposure would be more terrible, more injurious, for him, even than for her. Where she would receive a blow to her trust and love, a blow from which she would never wholly recover, he would be exposed to so shrivelling a blast of bitter contempt that life would be impossible. Yes, exposure would do literally that, leave the proud man utterly naked to so icy a wind of loathing and condemnation as would be too deadly to be borne.

So, round and round, went my slow mind.

And if he had taken a false step, made a terrible mistake, and done a great wrong, he had not deserved a punishment as heavy as that which discovery would bring upon him—so thin-skinned, so sensitive, so easy to hurt. Ever impatient, resentful and rebellious beneath the rod of criticism and the whip of rebuke, what would he be under the scorpion-scourge of his little world's utter disgust and contempt?

I could not bear to think of him thus facing Rosanne whom he loved, and whose love and admiration were so necessary to him.

Dawn lightened my open window through which I had stared unseeing—and dawn lightened the darkness of my mind. As the sun rose, I made my final conclusion.

If he had done a base thing, I should be doing a baser one if I denounced and exposed him.

Even apart from the ugly fact that I might profit from my act and deed, I could not do it and I must not do it.

But neither could I countenance and support the vile swindle. If I could not denounce Luke, I could not pretend that I did not know. I simply could not play the ghastly hypocritical rôle of the kind sympathizer and helper whose great desire was to strive in every way to ameliorate his dreadful lot. I had neither the skill nor the grace to play such a part, and I would not do it if I could.

For after I had said all that I could in his favour, the fact did remain that it was a vile imposture, and I could not possibly countenance and support it.

I must go. Go without seeing him. For I could not trust myself to speak to him as though I had not

found him out. In point of fact, I felt that I could never speak to him again, never see him again.

And that would mean that I must never see Rosanne again either.

§ 2

But there was one person whom I must see again, and see quickly.

Yrotavál.

Yrotavál must be Luke's accomplice. That completely accounted for his manner, his otherwise inexplicable air of importance, self-confidence and knowledge of his own power and the strength of his position. Yrotavál the indispensable and unassailable.

Of course, without his help, Luke could never have carried on the deception in France and got to England. Without Yrotavál's help, Luke could never have carried on as a totally blind man. Without his constant, ever-watchful care, guidance and connivance Luke could not have kept others at arm's length, as he had done, and managed without a professional nurse, companion and valet. Undoubtedly Yrotavál must know that Luke was not blind. So cunning a rascal, in perpetual contact with Luke, must have discovered his secret—if he had not known it from the first, which I did not doubt.

That entirely accounted for Yrotavál's conduct, attitude and bearing. He had Luke exactly where he wanted him. He was on velvet for life. Of course, he was the unshakeable power behind the throne, and his power was his knowledge. Poor Luke was absolutely in his grasp, and nothing but the death of one

of them could end the appalling situation. Yrotavál could blackmail Luke as long as he lived ; and if Luke died first, he could blackmail his relatives with the threat of posthumous exposure.

My poor brother was absolutely at the mercy of the only man whom I hated ; the man whom I trusted least in all the world.

I heard sounds of life about the house. I must make up my mind what to do, and then act quickly.

Was it possible that I was wrong about Yrotavál, and that Luke had deceived him as completely as he had deceived me, Rosanne, and everyone else ?

The more I thought of it, the less likely it seemed. I had an intuition, an instinctive feeling, that Yrotavál knew.

Why otherwise was he there ? Why should Luke have brought him to Courtesy Court ? Why should he keep him here, in spite of all Rosanne had said ? Of course Yrotavál knew.

Of course Luke feared to dismiss him—or the man would have been out of the house within an hour of Rosanne's complaining of him and saying that she strongly objected to him and his presence about the place.

An idea occurred to me.

Did Luke intend his blindness to be only " for the duration " ?

Now that the War was over and there was no question of his having to fight, would he pretend gradually to recover his sight ? That might, of course, be his idea—but what was he going to do with Yrotavál then ? He couldn't turn round to him and say,

" I've recovered my sight. Get out," and expect

Yrotavál to go. Or at any rate to go without a huge bribe—and leaving behind him the perpetual fear and danger of blackmail.

I could imagine no more competent blackmailer than Yrotavál, none better qualified, none less hampered by scruples of decency or mercy.

Of course Yrotavál knew. Of course he was Luke's accomplice, and I must act accordingly.

If I were wrong, and he was absolutely ignorant of the fact that Luke was blind, no harm would be done by my removing him from the house, inasmuch as Luke—who was *not* blind—had not the slightest real need of him, and Rosanne most strongly objected to his presence there.

If I were right, as I knew I was, then it was essential that Yrotavál should go, and it was my business to see that he went, or rather, that he came. Since I must go, Yrotavál must come with me ; and come with me to some place whence he could not return and make himself a menace and a danger at Courtesy Court.

Suddenly I rose to my feet, as it dawned on my somewhat slow mind that it was useless for me to shield Luke and keep his secret from Rosanne, if Yrotavál were free to expose him !

Inevitably such a man as Yrotavál would blackmail Luke. His demands would equally inevitably increase ; and should they at length reach the point at which Luke either could not or would not meet them, Yrotavál would first torture and then destroy him, would put him through the mental agony of the blackmailed, and, when finally rejected, denied and defied, would have his vengeance. I had lived too close to this sewer-rat of the slums of Barcelona, this deadly and dangerous product of its underworld, to have any

illusions as to his real character and nature. He would exhibit all the gratitude, friendship, forbearance and mercy of a hungry wolf, a wounded snake, an injured scorpion. I should soon know, as certainly as if it had been proven, that he was Luke's accomplice his partner—and therefore his master.

Besides, even if I could satisfy myself beyond shadow of doubt that Yrotavál was for once innocent and had no part in this particular piece of villainy, the fact remained that Rosanne wanted him to go ; and, since he was not necessary to Luke's welfare, go he should.

Round and round went my slow mind until I came to this conclusion.

That was that, then. I must go at once and Yrotavál must go with me.

And having come to that decision, I took off my evening kit, had a bath, and dressed for my journey.

§ 3

I suppose that, different as we are, I have in me the same strain of weakness that Luke displayed in his flight from reality. For I also fled, fled from him, from Rosanne, from the situation, from my home—and without a real farewell to Rosanne. I could not face Luke at all, to say good-bye to him, because I feared that I should show him that I knew. I was not equal to acting the part. The hypocrisy would have made me sick.

Breakfast was a movable feast, between eight and nine o'clock, and Luke was invariably the last, which of course was considered natural, right and proper, inasmuch as it takes a blind man so much longer to

prepare for the day. As a rule, I avoided Rosanne, breakfasting at eight o'clock punctually.

As I sat down to breakfast that morning, I said to old Johnson, the butler,

"Tell Mr. Luke's valet I want to speak to him, will you?"

"Yes, Sir. Here, Sir? Now, Sir?"

"Here. Now, please," I replied, and a few minutes later, Yrotavál crept quietly, cat-like, into the room.

"You sent for me . . . Sir?"

"Yes. I want you to go up to Town with me this morning. I shall be catching the ten-fifteen. The car will be at the door at nine-fifty sharp. I don't expect we shall be coming back to-night."

"But Mr. Luke . . ." began Yrotavál.

"You are going to Town with me by the ten-fifteen. Be ready at nine-forty," said I, fixing him with a very cold eye indeed. "Don't keep me waiting."

"Very good, Sir," replied Yrotavál, with a puzzled, questioning look in his shifty eye, and a slight further compression of his tight lips. "Not returning to-night, Sir?"

"Probably not," replied I briefly.

And as he bowed and turned away, I added to myself,

"Nor for ten thousand and one nights. Nor ever again, unless . . ."

When old Johnson re-entered the room with some letters, I gave orders for the car, and none for the packing of a suit-case. I was going to travel light. A pair of pyjamas, a clean collar, shaving-tackle and a tooth-brush would satisfy my brief and simple needs.

As I rose from a light and hurried breakfast, I again considered the question of Luke.

Ought not I to let him know that I had found him out? I could do it without any harsh accusation and reproach. . . .

I recoiled from the thought. Absolutely shrank from the idea. I could not face the scene. I could not hurt him so. I should be so ashamed *for* him.

It was sheer cowardice. I had not the strength of mind to do what I could not help feeling was, in some mysterious way, my duty.

It would hurt him so. It would be a mortal wound, not only to his self-esteem and self-regard, but to his self-respect.

I could not suddenly abandon my rôle of Luke's protector and guardian; the fender and buffer, when possible, between him and the world's roughness and the blows of Fate. It would be like brutally kicking a pet dog, like drowning a kitten; and though I can kill a man, I cannot drown a kitten.

No, I hadn't the courage, the nerve, the high sense of duty, thank God. What I could do, if later on I felt ashamed of myself for my cowardice, was to write to him. . . .

And then the idea again occurred to me, and I grasped it thankfully. Now that the War was over, it was more than likely that he would gradually "recover" his sight. That is what he would do; and he would never have the life-long miserable shame of knowing that I had discovered the truth.

And if he did not pretend to recover his sight? Suppose he preferred to remain in the lime-light of universal sympathy? Suppose he preferred his safe refuge from responsibility and the ordinary cares and duties of life; found he could not relinquish this protective colouring that he had assumed?

I could write to him.

I could give the matter long and careful thought, and let a sort of instinctive decision slowly crystallize in my mind, and then I could act upon it. And if the decision was that I must let him know, then I could still play the coward, spare myself the horrible pain of watching myself strike the blow, and write to him—stab him by post, so to speak. Equally then I could never meet him again.

How could we ever again be to each other what we had been up till last night—equal halves of one whole; twin brothers who had hardly been out of each other's sight, sound and thoughts, for the whole of their lives. Whatever happened, whatever course I chose, our brotherhood was finished.

But face him and denounce him now, I could not and would not.

Rosanne came into the room and my heart leapt—and sank.

"Finished? You are a greedy gobbler, Mark. Have another cup of coffee and talk to me while I eat."

"Can't. Going up to Town. Car will be here in a few minutes. Got to put a tooth-brush together. Staying away to-night."

"Hark at the man of affairs! All sudden and mysterious-like. Got a date?"

"Yes, Rosanne. A date."

"And you'll be coming back to-morrow?"

"Not before to-morrow certainly."

"I say—what about taking Luke with you? Don't you think it might do him good?"

"No. Sorry. Can't. Not this time."

No, not this time, nor any other. Never again would Luke and I set off together.

"Good mind to go with you myself, old son. . . . Ah! That made you jump, didn't it? I'm a bit suspicious of this 'date,' Mark."

I strove to grin feebly.

"Oh, by the way, can you spare Yrotavál to come with me?"

"Yes, I can spare Yrotavál—for a long while. For the rest of my life, in fact. Why?"

"I want to take him with me."

"Shopping for Luke? Take him, darling, and lose him. Take him, and don't bring him back. I'm perfectly certain that I could look after Luke and do anything for him that Yrotavál can do. Until he got another man. You know, Luke could really do without him altogether, only he won't realize it. He can shave himself now. He manages his food splendidly. He uses his typewriter every day. . . . Giulia does all his correspondence, with him. How I wish he'd let me be his valet. . . . Well, take care of yourself, Markie. When shall we see you again? Lunch to-morrow?"

"Don't know exactly. I'll ring you up or send you a wire."

"Well," said Rosanne, rising from her chair. "I must see Cook. Good-bye, Mark."

"Good-bye, Rosanne."

Yes. It was '*Good-bye, Rosanne.*'

I nearly failed—her—and Luke—and myself.

XV

“ A FIRST Class for you, Sir, and a Third for me ? ”
No, Master Yrotavál, that's not quite the idea. I'm not going to let you out of my sight till I've got you where I want you, or at any rate, until I have made up my mind about you.

“ Two Thirds,” said I, “ since there are no ‘ 40 *hommes ou 8 chevaux—en long,*’ ” and gave him a five-pound note.

Faintly puzzled, Yrotavál took the money with a non-committal grin, and got the tickets.

When the train came in, I made for an empty carriage, motioned Yrotavál in, and sat myself down opposite to him.

Slowly and subtly his manner changed as, unconsciously, our environment affected him. If not a case of ‘ *Back to the Army again, Bo,* ’ it was definitely a step back to our former democratic level. Before the end of our first hour together he had dropped the ‘ Sir,’ had shed some of his newly acquired refinements of speech, and begun to lapse back in the direction of his normal Cockney-East Side-Franco-Spanish dialect.

Producing cigarettes (Luke's, I noticed) he patted his pockets.

“ Forgot me goddam *allumettes*. Gotta match ? ”

Getting on nicely together. Soon be quite matey. . .

As we approached London.

"Where's we goin', *Patrón*?" he asked.

"For a binge," I replied. "At least, I am. Got to blow off steam."

"*M'Carben Diu!* You've said it. Gotta blow off steam? I gotta blow off steam too, or blow me block off."

"Oh, you'd like a binge, too, eh? I thought you would."

"You've said it, *Patrón*. I was gettin' near the end of me bit o' rope. If I don't soon wrap myself round a few pinard-and-absinthes, not to mention a *crevette*—a nice blonde one—I shall . . . I shall . . . cry. Go nuts. *J'aurai une chambre à louer*. Take a runnin' jump at a cop and bite him in the stomach. *Il faut faire des bosses*. *Carajo!* Bo, you sure gonna save my life. . . . Where we goin'?"

"Where would you like to go?"

"Where I can't. Never no more."

"Where is that?"

"Barcelona."

"No. Can't go there. But we can go to the next best place."

"What . . . ?"

"Yes, Paris. Know a 'better 'ole' than that?"

"Sure. One. Marseilles. Jimminy-jees! Luke and I had a helluva time there with old Sunnavabitch and the Spider."

"We'll go there. If we can get you through with Mr. Luke's passport, should you need to show one. I have got both his and mine in my pocket. And anyway, we're going by 'day-excursion' to Boulogne. No passports needed for that. And we'll book from Boulogne straight through to Marseilles."

"*Marseilles ? . . . Boss ! . . .*"

And sinking the petty differences of caste that had obtruded between us, Yrotavál seized my hand and wrung it.

"Jees!" he whispered. "I'll show you something, there, Bo."

"And if all goes well, I'll show you something, Yrotavál," I promised, a statement which brought an amused, half-pitying grin to the shark mouth and leathern face.

"You show *me*! Anyway, you've saved my life, Bo, you sure have," he continued. "*Nous allons 'dîner en ville'*! Say! Dey knows me there in every *bistro* and every *burdel* down-town! We'll show de gals a time. *Nous en allons avaler le bon Dieu en culotte de velours*! Boy! What a helluva goddam riot it'll be! Will we whoop it up in the Vieux Port! *Attaboy!*"

§ 2

We did not whoop it up in the Vieux Port.

Proceeding without let, hindrance, or loss of time, we headed straight for our happiness. We lunched early in London, supped in Paris, slept in the train, breakfasted sketchily at a wayside station buffet, and lunched late in Marseilles.

I gave Yrotavál an excellent meal at the *Hôtel de Noailles*, and not only good, but assorted, wine and liqueurs. Thereafter, letting him not out of my sight, I took him on a Cannebière café-crawl, and marvelled at the amount of cognac that he consumed. We were preparing for the evening; getting ourselves into trim; into the right frame of mind and body. We would dine well, drink well, and then sally forth in good time

for the opening of the haunts where we were really to see Life, really to enjoy ourselves at last. And *then*, Señor Yrotavál . . .

After fatiguing hours of Yrotavál's company and conversation, we returned to the hotel, ate well and drank better. We then retired to our sitting-room for further attention to whiskey, cognac, pinard and pernod—to kill time, if not ourselves.

It took a wonderful lot and a remarkable mixture to make Yrotavál drunk, but I think that when suddenly I sprang it on him, he might, by ordinary standards be so described.

He gave me a suitable opening.

"Las' time I was *hic*-here, it was Fort St. Jean for mine, not the *Hôtel de Noailles*," he grinned. "Bar-racks—not a posh joint all plush and palm-pots. . . . And it was good ol' Luke—not you."

"Yes. He could see then, couldn't he?"

"Sure. Good ol' . . ." and Yrotavál emptied his glass again.

"How long have you known that he's not blind?" I asked quietly, naturally, although my heart was thumping fast.

"All the time, you mug. . . . Eh? . . . God's Velvet Trousers! What? *What* did you say? *You* know! *Votre frère a débiné le truc!*¹ How long have you . . ."

The shock sobered him to some extent.

"Oh, yes, I know all right. How long have *you* known?"

Yrotavál slumped back in his arm-chair, liquor-defeated.

¹ *Given the show away.*

He laughed stupidly.

"Longer than you have, *muchacho*!" he grinned.

"Not you!" I jeered.

"No? Did you know before you came home? Before he came home? Before he left the hospital? *Disparate.*"

"You knew then? You knew from the first?" I asked.

"Me? Know? Bejezus! It was me first thought it up!" replied Yrotavál—and sealed his own fate.

I too leaned back in my chair; and I heaved a sigh of relief.

I do not know why relief should have been my first sensation. I suppose it was because I now knew where I was; knew that what I intended to do with Yrotavál was, in the first place, justified and, in the second place, necessary. It was, I suppose, the sense of relief that comes to one when suspense ends and the anticipated blow falls: suspense is over and one knows the worst.

Relief was followed by a cold and deadly anger. I could have killed the drunken ruffian then and there, but I had no desire to be publicly guillotined outside a French prison.

"So it was your idea, was it?" said I.

"Sure, Bo! And it woiked. The Luke kid plays blind, and me deaf and dumb! We has one pair of eyes and one pair of ears and one voice between the two of us—till we gets safe to England. I did de lookin' and de boy did de listenin' and talkin'. B' Jimminy Jees, some ramp! We sure put it acrost de Froggies!"

"All your very own idea, eh, Yrotavál?"

" You said it, Boss. . . . Me own little frame-up ! "

I half-filled his tumbler with neat cognac, and, with the air of one doing the most natural thing in the world, then filled the tumbler up with neat whiskey.

" You're a clever man, Yrotavál."

" Sure, Boss. You said it. . . . Any time you want—*hic*. Thass good hard liquor."

" Splendid. Have some more."

And again I filled his tumbler with equal measures of brandy and whiskey. Quite a cocktail. Easy to do, but equally easy to over-do. I didn't want Yrotavál to pass out. Not yet.

" Well, what about a move ? " said I, after his second tumbler of assorted spirits had joined the fore-runners.

" Sure. We'll grab us a *fiacre* and start with a class joint that I know. Some dive ! Down by the Docks. Best booze in Marseilles—smuggled stuff. Bouillabaisse. Bouillabitches too. Then to Marie's."

By his thickened speech, glassy eye and slight uncertainty of movement, I judged that the psychological moment had arrived ; and, with my arm firmly through his, steered him down the stairs, across the *foyer* and out into the Cannebière.

" We'll walk," I said, as with a lurch and an airy, somewhat wild, flourish of his arm he attempted to hail an elegant private car driven by a frozen-faced chauffeur.

Purely from the standpoint of the fact that it assisted me in my purpose, Yrotavál's expansive wave of the arm was most fortunate, for his hand caught a passing stout citizen of Marseilles a remarkably smart smack on the ear.

With a snarl of wrath the man wheeled upon Yrotavál

and returned the blow with hearty goodwill and even better aim.

Yrotavál kicked him, and the fight was on. I hoped that Yrotavál was too drunk to do himself justice and the citizen some cruel injustice, for, as well I knew, Yrotavál was an extremely dirty fighter.

So was I on that occasion, I hope the first and last in my life. For rushing into the fray, I smote both protagonists impartially, fell to the ground between them, flung my arms about the Frenchman's legs, brought him down on top of me and—poetic justice—received in my ribs a kick which Yrotavál aimed at him. Seizing his foot, I contrived to upset him also, no difficult matter in the condition in which he was. The three of us rolled, struggled, smote and swore, upon the ground. The swiftly gathering crowd surged about us, uttering loud cries of joy, alarm, protest, encouragement and "Police." I had been waiting for the last cry, for it was the Police that I wanted, and I now joined in with all the strength of my lungs.

It does not take long to summon gendarmes in the Cannebière of Marseilles. Within a couple of minutes of Yrotavál's unintentional blow upon the citizen's plump countenance, I was seized, hauled to my feet and confronted with that affronted Frenchman, who at the top of his voice gave evidence that I was an assassin, a bandit, an apache, a robber, a murderer, a *pompier*¹ and a foreigner. Then removing his outstretched accusing finger from its place beneath my nose, he thrust it beneath that of Yrotavál and shouted to the crowd, the Police and the heavens that Yrotavál was an assassin, a bandit, an apache, a robber,

¹ *Drunken ruffian* (slang).

a murderer, a *pompier* and a foreigner ; also that he was drunk.

I was sorry that Yrotavál, beneath the stress of circumstance, now went wholly Catalan and spoke only in that language, for I felt that what he was saying was worth hearing and understanding ; altogether too good to be missed.

A *brigadier* of police marched up majestically, as the assaulted Frenchman finished his tirade ; and, in the manner of Police-Sergeants the world over, enquired as to what was all this.

Having heard the wild plaint of the eminently respectable Marseillaise, he asked me what I had to say in reply. What I had to say was that it was perfectly true, that I was extremely drunk, and most disorderly ; that my friend was even more drunk and more disorderly ; and that the right and proper place for us both was a police cell.

“ I am inclined to agree with Monsieur,” observed the *brigadier* politely, and made it so.

Followed by a crowd and accompanied by the apoplectically indignant citizen, we were taken to the nearest *poste de police*, Yrotavál singing loudly if not tunefully.

After a brief interrogation, brusque and menacing, by a *Commissaire de Police* or some such portent, we were informed that we were under arrest, that we would be detained, and that our case would be considered by the Magistrate in the morning.

On hearing this news Yrotavál smiled, thanked the *brigadier* and observed that had the poor *crétin* been born in different circumstances, had a wholly different education and upbringing and been completely unlike what he unfortunately was, he would doubtless have

been a gentleman. Having been delivered of this opinion, he suddenly cast his arms about the gendarme who was holding him, smilingly observed "*J'ai un coup d'bleu,*" slumped, fell to the ground and passed out.

Had I been Fate itself I could not have managed and arranged things better.

§ 3

"Put him in Double Cell Number Three," said the official in charge of the *Commissariat de Police*, a little later, "and perhaps Monsieur—glancing at me—will be good enough to accompany him."

"*Avec plaisir, Monsieur,*" quoth I, speaking the truth. And we were personally conducted to Cell Number Three by four uniformed *agents de police*, three of whom frogs'-marched the unconscious Yrotavál.

Having dumped him on the floor of the cell, and each bestowed upon him a more or less gentle application of a stoutly shod foot, the gendarmes turned to go.

"*Messieurs,*" said I, putting my hand into my inner breast pocket, "*un moment, je vous en prie.*"

Coldly, angrily—and hungrily—the policemen regarded me.

"There is something I forgot to mention. Stupid of me. We are foreigners. We are drunk. We were the cause of a disgraceful fracas in the Cannebière. And why? Because it was our last night of freedom before joining."

"Joining?"

"Yes. The French Foreign Legion."

"O-h-h-h! . . . Why didn't Monsieur say so? . . . Ah! But that is different. That arranges itself."

Of course it was different. And of course it arranged itself. For it was fifty francs Government grant for these worthy men, if they could personally sponsor, introduce and produce us as recruits for the French Foreign Legion.

"And possibly you could get us a cup of coffee?" I proceeded, handing each of the worthy fellows a ten-franc note.

A few minutes later, the *agents de police* returned with the *brigadier*. So he had to be in on it too? Well, the more the merrier and the greater the certainty of the success of my scheme. The face of this excellent official had suffered a sea-change, for there was something remotely like a smile of geniality upon it.

"But how foolish of Monsieur!" he said. "Not to admit that he and his friend are recruits for the French Foreign Legion."

"To tell you the truth, *Monsieur le Brigadier*, I and my friend have been celebrating."

"Undoubtedly that one has," agreed the *brigadier*, nodding at Yrotavál, who lay stertorously snoring on the floor, and kindly adding, "Dump the body on the planks," an order tenderly obeyed by the *agents*.

"Monsieur enlisted in Paris?" he continued. "*Mais oui*. Without doubt. Certainly. Of course. And received his railway warrant and sustenance money and instructions to proceed by a certain train to Marseilles. And the train was not met by a non-commissioned officer of the French Foreign Legion at the Marseilles Station?"

"No. To tell you the truth, *Monsieur le Brigadier*, we didn't come by the train on which we should have come. We—er—celebrated in Paris also."

Still eyeing Yrotavál's carcase, the *brigadier* found nothing improbable in my statement.

"And not being met by a non-commissioned officer of the French Foreign Legion at the Station, you proceeded—er—to celebrate again in Marseilles? I see. . . ."

The *brigadier* eyed me thoughtfully for a moment.

"Have you any papers, Monsieur? Instructions? *Carte d'identité*? Passport?"

"Yes, I have our passports here," said I, producing mine and Luke's.

"Well, you won't want those in the Legion . . . But didn't they give you any papers at the *Bureau de Récruitment* in Paris? Any *feuilletons de route*? Did you give up your railway-warrants at the Station? Have you nothing wherewith to prove that your story is true, and that you did actually enlist in Paris and are genuine recruits for the French Foreign Legion?"

"*Monsieur le Brigadier*," replied I, "consider! As one man of the world to another. Let me remind you that we—er—celebrated after leaving the *Bureau*; and my memory is not at all clear as to what happened. Moreover, any papers we may have had were stolen from my friend here, along with his wallet. Some wretched pickpocket took his note-case, either in a restaurant or . . ."

"The gutter, perhaps, eh? And so you have no proof whatever?"

"I'm afraid not."

"Well then, it would seem that the best thing for you to do would be to join all over again, here at the depôt in Marseilles. If they raise any difficulty, or want to ask any awkward questions . . . not that

they will . . . But it's like this. If you are recruits for the French Foreign Legion, having already joined in Paris and signed your attestation documents there, you are soldiers. Thus you come under Military Law, and your case must be settled in Fort St. Jean, not here, in the *Commissariat de Police*. D'you see?

"Be much better for you," he added.

"Quite so! Quite so!" I smiled gratefully.

"They are lenient with *bleus*—until they are in uniform. It might be an awkward business for you here. Criminal case tried by a magistrate; assault and battery; accusation of robbery, I understand. Very nasty. Heavy prison sentence perhaps. Whereas the Commandant at Fort St. Jean would probably give you nothing more than the rough side of his tongue or at the worst, eight days' *cellules*."

"A thousand thanks, *Monsieur le Brigadier*. May I leave it to you? That is to say, may I now formally declare that we are recruits for the Legion; that we wish to join at once; and that we came here on purpose to do so? As for our offence, we intended no harm. My friend only jostled our accuser. We very greatly regret any trouble we've given, and only ask to be treated as the recruits we are, and handed over to the Competent Military Authority."

"It can be arranged," smiled the *brigadier*. "In fact, it arranges itself."

"Then are we free to go along to this Fort St. Jean, or rather, can we be taken there?"

"By no means," was the cold reply. "You are not free to go to this Fort St. Jean. Neither can you be taken there."

"But . . ."

"But I should not be surprised if you are sent for

to-morrow morning. It is for the Military Authorities to come and take you over from the Civil Authority, thus assuming the responsibility for you and for your trial and punishment for the alleged offence."

"But who will notify the Military Authorities that there are two recruits for the Legion here in your *poste de police*?"

"That will also arrange itself," replied the *brigadier*. "I repeat, I shall be surprised if you are not claimed to-morrow morning."

"How can I thank you, *Monsieur le Brigadier*? My friend and I are indeed anxious to join the French Foreign Legion with the least possible delay."

"I don't doubt it," replied the *brigadier* coldly.

He lingered, though the interview seemed to me to have terminated itself—and most satisfactorily. Would it be a fatal error or a very sound move to offer this Police Sergeant a *pourboire*?

Turning my back and contorting myself as one who struggles to extract money from an inner pocket, I took a fifty-franc note from my case, put it inside my passport and presented that book-like little document, closed, to the worthy fellow.

"Perhaps *Monsieur le Brigadier* would care to study my passport at his leisure?" I suggested.

"Ah!" observed the *brigadier* and departed with the others from the cell.

A little later the heavy door was unlocked, and another *agent de police* entered, bearing two of the mugs called "*quarts*" filled with coffee. These mugs he put down on the flap table attached to the wall, produced my passport from his pocket, handed it to me and retired.

The French police are, like our own, wonderful.

Also incorruptible. But the fifty-franc note had gone.

Seating myself on the other plank bed, I looked at Yrotavál. Sadly I gazed on the face of the drunk and bitterly thought of the morrow ; and of all the morrows to come.

The one drop of honey in my cup of bitterness was the thought that I had succeeded in the matter of the damnable scoundrel lying there. I had indeed got him exactly where I wanted him, or should have, in a few hours' time, if all went well. That this would come to pass I had little doubt. The French petty official is an economist, a *ramasseur de sous*, and knows exactly how many francs make fifty. Yrotavál and I were worth fifty francs to those who delivered us to the Legion ; and I felt certain that we should be safely delivered.

Since my tale of enlistment at Paris was purely mythical, and as we had not enlisted, there would naturally be no documentary evidence concerning us. The gendarmes, *agents de police*, *gardes mobiles*, or whatever they were, could truthfully claim the honour—and the cash—for recruiting us.

We were, thank Heaven, neatly in a cleft stick ; for, should Yrotavál recover his senses in time to protest that he hadn't the faintest intention of joining the French Foreign Legion, it would be pointed out to him that he had already done so ; that according to our own account, and on our own admission, we had enlisted in Paris. Also that we had got drunk, missed our train, arrived at Marseilles, and got drunk again on our way to Fort St. Jean, as I myself had borne witness.

But by the look of him, Yrotavál would be a member

of the French Foreign Legion a long time before he was a sober man who knew what he was saying and doing.

Suddenly, I realized that I was very very tired, and, lying back and resting my head on a folded horse-blanket, thin and filthy, I fell asleep.

§ 4

I dreamed a most amazingly realistic dream, of which I have never forgotten the least detail, so deeply did it impress itself upon my mind.

Now Luke had always been a wonderful dreamer, from earliest childhood. Quite frequently he dreamed of events to come, quite unlikely events ; and they did come. There was no trickery and no doubt about it ; for he would tell me of the dream, and I would say, " Well, that's not very likely," and would be amazed when it proved to be prophetic.

As a rule, they were not important things, but the fact that he had dreamed them was. For example, he said to me one day at school,

" I dreamed about you last night, Mark. Rotten dream. You were drowned. I can see you now lying face downwards. I can see you there on the ground—muddy grass—and somebody waggling your arms about. You seemed to be dead."

And within a week I very foolishly went after a dog that some brute at the mill had thrown into the river with a brick tied round its neck, a brick not heavy enough to keep the poor beast under and drown him properly. If I had stopped to think, I shouldn't have done anything so damned silly, for it was a very cold day and the river was swollen and swift. . . . Anyway,

it was a case of artificial respiration on the part of the village policeman who pulled me ashore.

That was one of a score of Luke's prophetic dreams.

Then again he would often dream of something that was actually happening somewhere else, and would "see" a death-bed, a house on fire, a ship sinking, or a fight; that sort of thing.

The third kind of dream that he frequently had was a dream about something that had happened in the past, and he would dream it so vividly that he could describe the historical dress, weapons, acts and words of the people about whom he dreamed. (Incidentally, he once saw a vision, or thought he did. But perhaps he was dreaming then.)

Well, although I am not in the slightest degree gifted in that way, this dream was so curious, realistic and detailed that it soon became almost indistinguishable from actual memories of real events. That is to say, I sometimes found myself subconsciously, as it were, looking back upon this dream, and wishing to God that I had not done what I did—in the dream. I expect I wish this so earnestly because I realize that if I had thought of it in time, I might actually have done it.

I wonder?

My dream carried on the story of my life, so to speak, from the time of my discovery of Luke's deception.

Seething with bitter anger and resentment, I went down to the hall and seated myself in front of the fire.

Luke came in at once and sat down in his favourite arm-chair on the left, almost facing me, and I stared at him while he, with despicable and cunning hypo-

crisy, gazed in my direction but just above my head, eyes apparently unfocussed, seeing nothing, and occasionally blinking

And as I looked at him and he refused to look straight at me, I knew that he had married Rosanne under false pretences ; had won her pity, her sympathy, and love—won her herself—by a villainous trick ; for she did not love him sufficiently to have married him had she not believed him to be blind and terribly in need of her.

And as I sat there wondering that he did not read my savagely angry and bitter thoughts, Rosanne came down the broad staircase, crossed the hall and seated herself beside me on the settee, Luke's gaze wavering above the heads of us both, as she did so.

And suddenly an evil impulse of revenge, of punishment for Luke, a means of impaling him firmly on the sharp horns of a dilemma, entered my mind. If he could not see us, I'd give him something to—not see ; if he could see us, I'd give him—something to think about.

Placing my left hand on Rosanne's, I put my right arm about her, drew her close to me and then pressed her head down upon my shoulder.

As we sat thus, I felt that she was filled with wonder at my extremely unwonted demonstrativeness.

Luke stiffened and stared—just above our heads.

Relinquishing her hand, I put mine beneath her chin, tipped her head back, bent over and kissed her—again and again.

Once she returned my kiss. Then her lips stiffened and she made to draw back.

Strengthening the pressure of my right arm which was about her, I drew her yet closer, kissed her again, and then, taking her left wrist, I raised her arm and put it about my neck.

There she left it. And as her head lay against my right shoulder, her face upturned, I kissed her repeatedly, hotly, but softly and without sound. Then with both my arms about her, I clasped her to me with all my strength.

And there, in front of Luke, her arms about my neck, mine about her body, his wife and I sat silent.

For one second Luke had hung on the verge of self-exposure; his hands had gripped the arms of his chair; he had drawn in his feet as though to rise, and his face had flushed and then turned pale. His dilated eyes had at last come down to normal level, and he was staring at us, astounded, shocked, aghast. And then, in the act of springing to his feet, he had remembered; *remembered that he could not see.*

And so in silence I tortured him, Rosanne consenting to, or at any rate suffering, my kisses and embrace.

And as I turned to gaze at the swindler whom in my dream I hated fiercely, the door behind him opened and I awoke as a uniformed *agent de police* entered, followed by a Corporal and a file of soldiers in the dress of the French Foreign Legion.

"So these are the birds, are they?" said the Corporal.

"There they are. All present and correct," grinned the *agent*. "In fine plumage, if not in good song."

"Oh, I wouldn't say that," said the Corporal as Yrotavál emitted a stertorous snore. "How are we going to get that one along? If he weren't a *bleu* in *pékin* dress, I'd have him dragged along on his back, but . . ."

"What about a bucket of cold water?" suggested the *agent*.

I thought it was time that I contributed my suggestion to this symposium. It seemed to me that

Fort St. Jean would be a much more desirable scene for Yrotavál's restoration and recovery.

"If I might make a suggestion, *Monsieur le Caporal*, what about a taxi?"

"A great thought! Brilliant!" admitted the Corporal. "What about a taxi each? That would only be six. Do you suggest that I or the State should provide them?"

"Well, I think we could do with less than six. Say one or two to start with. And I'll pay for them."

"What with?"

"Money."

"What's that? Haven't seen any lately. Have you?"

"Yes. I've got some here," and I produced my wallet.

At least four pairs of eyes regarded it with interest and favour.

"A *bleu* of the right sort," observed the Corporal. "Good. We'll have at least one taxi from here to the Fort. And we'll stop *en route* for a cup of coffee, eh, *bleu*?"

"With something in it," I agreed.

And with no more than reasonable violence, Yrotavál was hauled from his plank bed to an uneasy seat in a taxi which was quickly called.

My farewells to the occupants of the *poste de police* were cordial; our journey to Fort St. Jean, broken by a call at a *bistro*, was pleasant; and our reception by the Sergeant of the Guard as recruits for the Legion, prompt, unmistakeable, and—final.

When El Señor Don Caballero Yrotavál y Rewes recovered sufficiently to realize the state of affairs and

grasp the situation, he was, to say the least of it, surprised.

He was also furious to the point of violence, revolt, mutiny, madness.

At first, I believe, he positively entertained a suspicion that I had some hand in the matter; and I am sure that he never changed his opinion that, but for my incredible stupidity in getting drunk when he was drunk, this appalling catastrophe would never have overtaken us.

A brief conversation-piece, which interested me, between a hard-faced *adjutant* receiving us into the fold, and Yrotavál, still bewildered:—

“*Señor!* . . . Sir. . . . *Monsieur l'Adjudant!* This is an outrage. I wish to protest. I do not want to join the French Foreign Legion. Advantage was taken of me when I was drunk.”

“So? Isn't that just too bad . . . That being the way of it, we'll keep an extra-watchful eye on you, my friend. . . . *Silence, you dog, before I . . .*”

XVI

ONCE again I must resist any temptation to write a book about Life in the French Foreign Legion, even from this new angle, that of an ordinarily enlisted man at the Sidi-bel-Abbès Dépôt.

As I am trying to tell the story of Luke, and of what I, in my wisdom, did regarding him, I will only tell as much of my second Legion venture as concerns my subject.

Rosanne having kept all the letters that I wrote to her, and some that I wrote to Luke, I can correct my memories and make them absolutely accurate.

§ 2

I had a splendid start in the Legion, inasmuch as I not only knew the worst but knew the ropes ; also because I positively wanted all the hard work, fatigues and constant occupation that I could get—and those are matters of which there is no dearth in the Legion ; and because I was fortunate in having private means which, though definitely small in my own walk of life in England, amounted to great wealth in that regiment of the poorest of the poor, whose pay is negligible, mere inadequate tobacco-money. It is but slight exaggeration to say that, in the Legion, no man who has money need do anything that he doesn't want to

do, and can count on being able to do anything that he does want to do—except buy himself out.

I was again lucky in having had the Guards' training, to which the dépôt recruits' course at Sidi-bel-Abbès and Saida is inferior in rigour, stress, strain and intensity; and also in having had four years in the trenches. They had inured me to real hardship, beside which any that I was likely to encounter in Morocco would be quite bearable.

What was new and severe was the combination of great heat and the terrible monotony of outpost life.

So, all things considered, I realized, and was thankful, that few men ever joined the Legion under more favourable conditions.

From the very first, I determined to win promotion as quickly as I could, in order that I might have control of Yrotavál; and as soon as I had got my uniform and had settled down at Sidi-bel-Abbès, I put in for admission to the *peloton de Sous-Officiers*. I was warned by Yrotavál, who, after all, knew infinitely more than I about the Legion, especially in Africa, that I should be making a great mistake in doing so, because it meant double the work and quadruple the responsibility, not to mention the fact that I should lose many privileges and, worst of all, much of the pleasure of his company and that of my *bons camarades* of our *escouade*.

Did I want to be a *sacré animal avec sardines sur ses jambes*, he asked—in other words, a damned non-commissioned officer with stripes on his arms?

I replied that that was precisely what I did want to be, but forbore to add that my main reason for this was that it would give me what I wanted almost more than anything—power over him, opportunity to keep

my eye on him, and, to a very great extent, the ability to regulate his comings and his goings.

As a Corporal, with Yrotavál in my room and my *escouade*, I should have him as much in my charge as is a child in that of its father. As a Sergeant, I should be in a position to do with Yrotavál what I would. And what I wanted and intended to do with him was to have him always with me. Practically never out of my sight. Where I went, there Yrotavál should go, and of what he did I should have complete cognizance.

Meantime, to stick closer to him than a brother sticketh, to be with him night and day, and if any orders threatened to separate us, to use whatever money might be necessary to get those orders modified. To square a Corporal would be extremely easy, a Sergeant easy but more expensive, a Sergeant-Major neither difficult nor costly, an *Adjudant*, save in very rare cases, not too difficult and not beyond my means. And the *Adjudant*, so far as the *légionnaire* is concerned, is all-powerful.

To the Officers, the men hardly exist as individuals. They are not known to them by name, and the personal contact is of the slightest. It would be a strange and unusual case in which I could not influence the Corporal to influence the Sergeant to influence the Sergeant-Major to influence the *Adjudant* to arrange that I and my *cher copain* Yrotavál were not separated.

§ 3

It would, of course, be entirely false to say that I was now happy; but I can truthfully state that I was not always and wholly unhappy. One cannot be that when one literally has no time to remember, is

too tired to think, and is fully occupied from waking till sleeping. And in the Legion one sleeps, whatever one's troubles.

And I set myself to conquer unhappiness, to get the better of this misery that tried to get the better of me, overwhelm me, defeat me, and turn me into a soured cynic and a wretched hypochondriac.

I meant to make the Legion my career, set myself the high and difficult ambition, rarely achieved (by a foreigner), of winning a Commission from the ranks. With that aim and object to strive for, my constant work to do, and my unending watching of Yrotavál, I should have no time for self-pity.

And I might pause here to remark that if any man in this world gets an all-round training in the duties of the Compleat Soldier as private, as non-commissioned officer, and as officer (should emergency cause him to take the place of one), it is the man who passes through the Legion's *peloton de Sous Officiers*.

It is not a crushing, grinding, gruelling drill-training, such as he gets in the Guards, with the object of turning him into the perfectly disciplined machine. It is a training in all that the private soldier should know and do, followed by a training in all that the non-commissioned officer should know ; a training in initiative, resource and leadership ; a very sound, thorough and wide training too ; and the intelligent man who goes through it, if he have initiative and ability of his own as well as resourcefulness and resolution, should be able, if called upon to do so, to command a Company in action or a *poste* in state of siege.

I had sent post-cards to Rosanne from Paris and Marseilles, as I saw no reason why she should have

occasion to worry about me as well as about Luke ; and I now wrote to her regularly.

It was difficult. It was painful. It made me feel a hypocrite ; but though I could not and dared not say much to her when I was with her, on paper I could let myself go, put it all down, and give rein to my longing for self-expression, open my heart, and relax the repression and suppression from which I had so long suffered. I do not, for one moment, mean that I made love to her, that I wrote a line that Luke was not most welcome to read ; but I did write to her as though she were more than my sister, my very dearest friend whom I had always loved.

Not only did I write to her because it was a relief and a joy, but in order that I might get answers to my letters.

I told her (God knows how truthfully) that I had come away because I could no longer bear to see Luke in the condition in which he was ; that I had not the fortitude and courage to remain at home with him ; that, moreover, I had to do something, and soldiering was the only thing I knew how to do ; that I was ineligible for a commission in the British Army, save through the ranks, a long, slow process doubtful of success, and that a not particularly desirable one. I had no wish to be a grey-haired Lieutenant-and-Quartermaster. Nor, even if I were eligible for re-enlistment in a British regiment, did I want to soldier in peace-time in an English garrison town. I had had enough floor-scrubbing, grate-blackleading, ration-tin-polishing, pipe-claying, and barrack-square drill. So I had come to the Legion which was always on active service ; where one could have a life of colour, variety, sunshine and romance ; where a professional soldier

might make himself a career, and get, on the field, that promotion for which he might have to wait twenty years in England, and wait in vain. And so forth. I had to make it convincing and it was partly true—for there really was sunshine (when there wasn't heavy rain, bitter cold wind, and, in the Atlas Mountains, sleet, snow, and conditions of almost Arctic severity).

I also assured Rosanne that she need not have any anxiety about Yrotavál; that he was here with me in the French Foreign Legion; that he would be here for the next five years and, at the end of that time—we would see. There was one thing she would not see, however, and that was Yrotavál back at Courtesy Court.

I also wrote to Luke, and it was a difficult letter to write.

I felt that I must not give him the slightest inkling of the true state of affairs—that I knew all about his imposture—for otherwise I might just as well have denounced him to his face. He would suffer quite as much misery, shame, anxiety and fear of exposure, if I told him by letter (or raised any doubt in his mind) as if I had told him in so many words, face to face. But at the same time I had got to explain Yrotavál's defection, and I hesitated between two courses; one of saying that I had more or less kidnapped him because Rosanne detested him and hated his being at Courtesy Court; and the other of saying that Yrotavál, tired of the humdrum peaceful life of respectability, had not only volunteered and begged to come with me, but had said that he had intended to quit before long, in any case. The former seemed to me somewhat undesirable, as implying that Rosanne put her likes and dislikes before (the supposedly) blind Luke's necessity

and comfort. The latter seemed undesirable because Luke could hardly imagine that such a man as Yrotavál would throw up a position in which he was in clover, on velvet, and as he himself would express it, sitting pretty, to come back and rough it again in the French Foreign Legion. It didn't sound convincing.

Finally I decided on a sort of combination of these two and a third, in which I took the blame.

I said that I couldn't help seeing that Yrotavál was something of a disturbing influence at Courtesy Court ; that the servants detested him—especially the women-folk—and threatened to leave ; that I had noticed that his manner to Rosanne was anything but that of a well-trained valet of her husband's ; that, having had a talk with him, I realized that he was, at any rate for the time being, weary of the monotony and restricted life of the country ; that he was tired of respectability and virtue ; that he was bored to extinction, and really yearning for a return to the flesh-pots, yea, even the cook-house *soupe*-pots of the French Foreign Legion. That, moreover, I had felt for some time that Yrotavál had served his purpose, come to the end of his usefulness and was really more harmful than beneficial to Luke ; that he was to Luke a constant reminder of the trenches, of his terrible tragedy, and of all sorts of other things better forgotten ; and, finally, that Luke could get an English valet quite as good as Yrotavál in some respects, and a very great deal better in others.

I then hinted at a piece of selfishness on my own part, a desire to have Yrotavál with me as a batman again in the French Foreign Legion, to which in my own utter boredom and unfitness for any other profession than soldiering, I had returned.

I begged Luke to forgive me for my gross and un-

warrantable interference with his affairs, and begged him to believe that, at any rate to some extent, I had acted for the best and in what I thought to be his own interests.

It was the best I could do ; and I saw no reason why Luke should suspect the truth and fall into a state of perpetual worry and anxiety as to what might happen.

That I was fit for nothing else but soldiering he would readily believe ; that Yrotavál was sick, sorry, and tired of respectability he would believe ; and that I had bribed Yrotavál to come with me he might imagine.

If, at first, Luke's conscience pricked him, and uneasiness and fear beset him, that surely would gradually pass off, as all went well, nothing transpired concerning his secret, and my regular letters to Rosanne reassured him and lulled him into a sense of security. He would conclude that the worst that could happen was that at the end of five years Yrotavál might return and, holding out a beseeching hand of iron, well covered with a velvet glove, beg, menacingly, to be taken back into his comfortable and easy billet as valet to his old friend and master.

Yes—it seemed to be the best I could do ; and to the best of my ability I did it.

I awaited Rosanne's first letter with painful eagerness ; opened it with mingled excitement, joy, and anxiety ; and found it to be much as I expected.

She was shocked, stunned almost, she said, at finding that I had cut myself off from her—from her and Luke—for five years, which would be years of the greatest

danger to me ; and to her, years of anxious fear for my safety. *Why, oh why, had I not told her what I was going to do, and at least have talked it over with her before taking so irrevocable a step. That I felt as I did about Luke she could quite understand ; and that I must have employment she could quite understand ; but surely I could have found something to do in England, something other than soldiering, something that would have left me free to come, from time to time, and stay at Courtesy Court which, after all, was not only my home but my own house.*

(Didn't she guess, didn't she for one moment dream, the real reason ; understand it all—realize how difficult, how impossible, it was for me to do just that ; to come and see her from time to time, and stay under the same roof with her ? Apparently not.)

She thanked me for taking Yrotavál away, and assured me that there, at any rate, I had done her a real kindness and a very great service.

Not only was Luke resigned to his loss, but she was perfectly certain he was the better for Yrotavál's departure. He seemed easier in his mind, more light-hearted, happier ; and the tiny cloud that had arisen on their horizon and threatened to spread, had been entirely dissipated.

Yrotavál had been not only a bone of contention but a source of irritation and, long as she had borne it, hard as she had striven to hide the fact from Luke, the man really had been something of a danger to their domestic happiness. It had been absurd and ridiculous that such a position should have been allowed to arise, and she couldn't be too thankful to me that I had taken the bull by the horns, or rather Yrotavál by the ear, and removed him. And the splendid thing about it all was that, not only was she rid of the loathsome

moron, but that his departure had really not upset Luke at all.

So things were, on the whole, better at Courtesy Court. Luke was coping marvellously with his blindness, the house was happier than it had been since he came back to it, and Luke's blindness aside, her only trouble now was the thought of my long separation from them and the danger in which I should be, on active service in the French Foreign Legion.

Well, that was that ; and, on the whole, good ; and if I had really served Rosanne, that fact was my reward.

Luke's letter was a curious document.

Reading between the lines, I could see that he was a little puzzled, not to say anxious. While evidently having no idea as to the true state of affairs, he obviously could not quite understand my action with regard to Yrotavál, nor Yrotavál leaving him as he had done—without a struggle or even a word of protest.

Poor Luke had to put up a pretence of missing Yrotavál terribly, *Yrotavál, who had become a second pair of eyes to him ;* but his reproaches were half-hearted, and he admitted that *doubtless he would, sooner or later, get accustomed to a new valet, though he hated changes and was by no means sure that he would not try to do without a valet altogether.*

As I could see by his typewriting, said he, *he was making great progress along the blind man's path through the dark Valley of the Shadow—not of Death nor of Life—but of something between the two.*

I was ashamed for him. I suffered for him, and with him, to think that he had to descend to this ; had to be such a hypocrite ; had to write these packs of lies to

bolster up the deception—which he had undertaken, I was sure, in a moment of terrible weakness and overwhelming temptation.

And until he began the gradual recovery of his sight, he must, of course, continue to weave this tissue of lies and deceit.

§ 4

To shorten what might be quite a long story, both Yrotavál and I, being not only old soldiers but re-joined *légionnaires*, completed our recruits'-training in the minimum time and heard our names read out in *rapport* one evening, as members of the next draft for Morocco, where the Riff campaign was in full swing. We were not sent to Morocco direct, however, but to a place called Saida, where a battalion was undergoing intensive training in the particular methods of warfare being pursued in the Atlas Mountains. After a few weeks here, we returned to Sidi-bel-Abbès and thence entrained, by narrow-gauge railway, for Oujda on the Algerie-Maroc border. Here we underwent more intensive drill, training, and rifle-range work, and then marched to a concentration camp for troops of all arms. From here, we marched again, entered the danger-zone, and after skirmishes and affairs of outposts, took our place in the battle line of a *groupe mobile*, and were soon in the thick of the fighting.

Letters from home became irregular, not because Rosanne grew tired of writing, but because the field postal-organization broke down from time to time, and the delivery of letters to *les légionnaires* not unnaturally was a matter of much less importance than the delivery

of rations and ammunition. The lines of communication were long, difficult, constantly threatened, and frequently broken by the extremely active Riffian *harkas* under the command of Abd-el-Krim.

One day there arrived at the *poste* which our company had built and garrisoned, letters which were distributed at *rapport* that evening, and the *vaguemestre* handed me a batch from home. Quite a little packet, and more welcome to me than food, wine, or even tobacco. More welcome indeed than anything on earth could possibly have been. So wonderful, so precious, that instead of tearing them open instantly, and reading them through from beginning to end, I thrust them inside my tunic, almost literally hugging them to my breast, hoarded them up, and waited for an opportunity to read them in peace, to re-read them a dozen times, to savour and enjoy them, and to learn, almost by heart, every word and sentence.

But when I came off duty and had cleaned my rifle, bayonet and accoutrements, finished all work and fatigues and settled down in a corner of the *enceinte* really to enjoy myself for an hour and for the first time in weeks, I suffered disappointment once again.

There was fresh trouble.

Yrotavál was at the bottom of it; and as I read, I again felt that cold and deadly anger and hatred under the influence of which I had removed him from Courtesy Court and decoyed him into the Legion.

Blackmail—as I had feared while he was at Courtesy Court.

But I had not, I admit, visualized the possibility of long-range blackmail, so to speak. Installed in what

he considered an impregnable position as Luke's nominal servant and real master, blackmail in one form or another would be easy, and to a man of Yrotavál's type, natural and obvious, indeed almost inevitable. But it simply had not occurred to my stupid mind that—once I had got him not only out of the house but out of the country and buried alive in the French Foreign Legion on active service in Morocco—blackmail was possible. I had imagined that I had not only removed him from the scene of his offence, but had completely eliminated him from Luke's life ; liquidated him, so to speak, so far as Luke was concerned.

But I had under-estimated the villainy and resourcefulness of El Señor Don Caballero Yrotavál y Rewes.

“ *I am worried about Luke,*” wrote Rosanne. “ *That sounds rather an under-statement, because I have naturally been worried about him from the day he returned here from France. What I mean is that there is a new anxiety. He is getting letters from Yrotavál and they are bad for him. They upset him, each one more than the last. He won't tell me why, or what's wrong ; but now, even if I didn't see them, I should know when he got them.*”

As you know, he is terribly susceptible to annoyance, is very easily disturbed and troubled, and is prone to make mountains out of mole-hills. That is my hope—that this is really some sort of a wretched little mole-hill. But it's a mighty great mountain to poor Luke, whatever it is. If it goes on, I shall take it upon me to interfere, intercept all letters from Yrotavál, and destroy them, instead of letting Giulia read them to him in the course of her 'secretarial duties.' For two pins, I'd open one and read it.

I'd hate to be such a dishonest meany as to read a blind man's letters. It would seem a terrible thing to do ; but

surely it would be a case of the end justifying the means—and the meanness—wouldn't it? I have asked Giulia and she says that Luke gets no disturbing letters that she knows of; and that Yrotavál's are just respectful letters from an ex-servant to a good master and friend. I can't make it out. Tell me what you think, Mark. Shall I open one, read it, and send it to you, if it is obvious that Yrotavál is deliberately worrying and disturbing Luke? And it's no good my saying 'if,' for Luke is worried and disturbed and troubled.

I can't think how such a man could be in a position to do this to Luke—how he should have the power to upset him. But there it is, in spite of what Giulia says. . . ."

Yes, there it was.

And I must deal with it.

I opened Luke's letter with considerable trepidation, tinged with sympathy and some curiosity.

Poor Luke!

Poor devil, how he must be suffering. The fear, the worry, the miserable and crushing anxiety of the black-mailed. And how could Luke account plausibly for the fact that Yrotavál was in a position to worry him?

I read Luke's letter.

Oh, that was the line he took, was it?

"One can quite understand Yrotavál's wanting to come back," he wrote. "The first soft job he had ever had. The first time in his life he had had a good home, good food, good treatment and everything he wanted. And best of all, peace and security. He found Courtesy Court a bit of a change after Barcelona, New York, Chicago, Soho, Limehouse, the Legion and the trenches. And now he finds

the Legion and the Riff campaign a bit of a change after Courtesy Court. He's not only dying to come back, but he'll die if he doesn't. Not only wants to come, but intends to come. As soon as he can, too. Says he can't stick five years of it, and he's going 'on pump' at the first opportunity. . . ."

Good Lord! What a fool I was. It had positively never entered my head that Yrotavál might solve his little problem like that; desert—and make his way back to England and Courtesy Court.

"And I don't want him back here now. I've got used to being without him. I manage very well indeed, with Rosanne's help; and the more I have to do for myself, the more I can. And Rosanne, for some reason or other, is so thankful that he has gone that it would be a shame to let him come back, especially as he is no longer necessary.

So I want you to make it clear to him that, in the first place, if he does desert, it is no good his coming here. Job definitely not kept open. No fat-headed calf here awaiting the return of the prodigal valet. Perhaps he won't want to desert if you can make that quite clear to him. But best of all, old chap, see that he doesn't do it. Butter his feet, as Rosanne did the kitten's. It wouldn't take very many francs' worth, to do it. I've no doubt that if you gave him a salary which naturally ceased if he bolted, he'd think twice—and then not do it. Probably it's the salary that attracts him back here. Suppose you promised him as much as I used to pay him, so long as he stays with you. . . ."

Somehow I didn't think that it would be a salary that I should promise Yrotavál. Something quite different.

Nor was I able to console myself with the thought that such a salary as I could offer him would weigh for a moment against the profits of blackmail and the comforts of Courtesy Court. If I read Yrotavál aright, his idea of velvet would not be the khaki of the French Foreign Legion; his notion of a bed of roses would not be a sack of straw on a plank in a Moroccan *poste*; nor a dole from me his idea of the exploitation of a good thing in blackmail.

I was badly worried.

Had all my efforts been in vain and was the situation worse than ever? Had his contentment with the fair and reasonable bribery, corruption, and illegal gratification at Courtesy Court now turned to anger and stark threat, open blackmail, with terrible danger to Luke's peace and Rosanne's happiness?

Thanks to changes, Yrotavál had hitherto, fortunately for him, escaped recognition as a deserter, the man who had mysteriously disappeared and been posted as missing, after the bombing of the hospital at Pont Mailleul. This was not remarkable, as the personnel had completely altered since August 1914, the Legion having been destroyed and reorganized so many times that there was scarcely a man, an N.C.O. or an Officer left, not only of our Battalion de Marche formed at Toulon, but of the Legion itself.

I admit that while considering my original plan, I had glanced at the idea, once safely in the Legion, of laying information against Yrotavál as a war-time deserter who had escaped to England. This would have earned the fellow, at the very least, an eight years' Penal Battalion sentence, and would have almost certainly disposed of him once and for all, so far as Luke, Rosanne and I were concerned, as well as giving him

a fitting punishment for what he had done to my brother.

But I could not do it. I recoiled from what seemed to me the treachery of such a course. It was a foolish scruple, no doubt, but I felt that I had done quite enough in the way of preventive punishment in getting him back to the Legion, which was, after all, the life which he had originally chosen for himself. Denunciation would have served him right, and been no more than his due, but my inhibition was too strong—partly because Luke himself, whether induced by Yrotavál or not, was just as bad as he; and I had, for a time, been a deserter myself. And even if I had not avoided the heavy fighting in those terrible trenches in order to nurse my brother, and even if Luke had been genuinely blind and completely innocent, I still could not have done it. Instead of well-deserved punishment it would have seemed like treachery, betrayal.

To me there is something horrible about the very words "laying information," and the act of being an informer. I suppose it is a relic of one's schoolboy training and prejudice against the tale-bearer and the sneak.

It is a curious phenomenon; for although I quickly and totally rejected the idea of punishing and defeating Yrotavál in this way, I eventually did something far worse. I don't know that it was worse for him than a sentence of eight years' *travaux forcés* in a Penal Battalion, but it was worse for me, from the moral point of view, and should have been far more strongly condemned by my own conscience.

In fact, considered without prejudice and reference to schoolboy conventions, the one would have been an entirely blameless course of action, while the other,

the course I actually followed, was utterly indefensible. It was simply criminal.

And yet I should have been ashamed to do the one, while to this day I feel no shame with regard to the other.

Now—should I suddenly confront him with my knowledge of what was going on; warn him and threaten him; tell him that if I heard that he wrote Luke one more letter I would . . .

Would what? What could I do? Tell him that he must transfer his attentions from Luke to me? Black-mail me instead of Luke?

Hardly. I somehow couldn't imagine Yrotavál regarding me as a likely and suitable subject for black-mail. I could scarcely say to him,

“Just let me know how much you thought you would get out of my brother, and I'll pay you the amount for him,” apart from the fact that I was fairly sure that the first item in his bill would be a return to the safe haven of Courtesy Court, where he'd be not only hidden from, but beyond the reach of, the Spanish Police, the French Police, his implacable Anarchist and Communist “comrades” whom he had betrayed, and all other enemies whomsoever. Money he would want, of course; all he could get. But of what use would money be to him if his life and liberty were endangered, as they would be almost anywhere outside of England?

Which would be the better? Promise or threat, bribery or punishment? I must find out, for whatever happened, Luke must receive no more threatening letters.

What about a combination of the two? Reward for good conduct and punishment for bad. The reward would be simple enough. Ten francs a week, so long

as I received no further complaint from Luke. And punishment? Yrotavál was not easily daunted, and was not the sort of man to pay the slightest heed to a threat of being beaten up, or of any other act of vengeance. It would rather amuse him (it almost amused me) to think of my endeavouring to brow-beat, threaten and terrify him. No, there was no hope in threats of personal violence, and in point of fact, two could play at that game. My talking "rough stuff" to him would be the amateur competing with the experienced professional, tyro versus past master.

§ 5

Under the influence of my fear that Yrotavál might escape me, might desert and return to Courtesy Court, I provided the gentleman with a body-guard. Carefully, and one by one, I selected half a dozen men whom I liked and trusted and who, as I believe, liked and trusted me.

In the sight of each of these I rendered Yrotavál precious. For, so long as he was with us, present, if not correct, in our midst, they each received on our Thursday pay-day a little addition to their official emolument, a sum small to me but very considerable to them in terms of wine, tobacco, postage-stamps or canteen feeds.

Having explained to them individually that I simply could not bear it if Yrotavál went away and left me, I pointed out to them collectively that it would be quite simple to arrange that at least one of their number always had an eye on him.

The first man I approached was one Mallen, a magnificent American, taciturn, grim-visaged and reserved, a man who drank all that he could get and never ap-

peared the worse for it ; drank, I imagine, because he had something to forget, and in wine found his only anodyne. Like others of his type, he heartily disliked Yrotavál, and when I to some extent explained the position to him, Mallen assured me grimly that should Yrotavál, in spite of his care and attention, succeed in deserting, he would himself desert—for the sole purpose of catching him and bringing him back.

Another man into whose care and keeping I committed Yrotavál was a wild Australian whose name, real or assumed, was Charles O'Malley. He was quite mad, quite fearless, a very desperate fighter, and a man who would do anything for a bottle of wine. As soon as he realized the situation and grasped the idea, he addressed Yrotavál by such terms of endearment as his standing-drink, his walking wine-bottle, informed him that inasmuch as he could "shake him down" for a franc's worth of wine every Thursday, he'd shake the indescribable teeth out of his unmentionable head if he ever caught him so much as thinking of deserting and abandoning us to our fate.

A third man, Sanson-Fayette, was a very queer fish, remarkable even in this school of queer fish, a man who had been a police officer of the rank of Detective-Inspector or Superintendent, whether of the Paris *Sûreté* or of the Belgian Criminal Investigation Department. What had caused his downfall I don't know, but he was a very nice man and undeniably extremely clever. I think that of all Yrotavál's body-guard he was the most valuable from my point of view. Certainly he contributed nothing to Yrotavál's peace of mind or sense of security. In fact, he did to some extent for Yrotavál what that scoundrel was doing for me. He worried him. And I think he frightened him,

for he watched and shadowed him in a manner that Yrotavál, as an ex-police spy himself, must have admired, if not appreciated. He also found out something about him, and the fact contributed nothing to Yrotavál's remaining peace of mind.

It just occurs to me—and I rather wonder that I never thought of it at the time—that quite possibly Sanson-Fayette was on duty, so to speak, in the Legion, seconded from the French or Belgian Police for some special purpose.

Anyway, he was one too many for the clever Yrotavál and kept that criminal guessing.

The fourth was a man whom I chose for very different reasons, a Swiss named Dreiner, who almost certainly had been a pastor of some kind, probably the minister of some obscure village sect. His mind may or may not have been permanently unhinged, but it swung on one remarkably solid and unbreakable support, an utterly incorruptible and unwavering sense of duty. To this and to his undying love of the Legion that had given him a home and a refuge, I shamelessly appealed, after giving him more than a hint that Yrotavál was contemplating desertion, that Yrotavál must be prevented from deserting, and that Dreiner was the very man to see that he did not do it.

The other three members of Yrotavál's body-guard were men who disliked Yrotavál, liked a joke, and rather more than liked a weekly carouse and a sufficiency of tobacco. Whether it was the constant watchfulness of these seven friends that prevented his escape, I don't know; but my fears that he might desert proved groundless, and in time, he and I found ourselves, still together, in country and conditions which made desertion impossible.

XVII

MY promotion to the rank of Corporal was very welcome because it gave me an enhanced sense of power over Yrotavál ; partly because I could do a great deal to prevent our being separated ; and partly because, as a Corporal, I was now a person worth placating.

I don't think that, hitherto, he had had any sort of respect for me, even when I was the master at Courtesy Court and he was a servant. There he felt, no doubt, that through his knowledge of Luke's secret, it was rather I who was in his power than he who was in mine. Now there was no question as to who had the power, and I looked forward to the time when I should be a Sergeant and perhaps Sergeant-Major—when Yrotavál should be my batman and live in my shadow.

What did worry me was the thought that, in one of the frequent attacks on our *poste*, our skirmishes on patrol and reconnaissance duty, or in the next battle, when the *groupe mobile* was re-assembled into a striking-force, I should be killed and Yrotavál would be free to recommence his blackmailing activities. That was an ever-constant anxiety and fear. There was, of course, the other aspect of the fortunes of war. Yrotavál himself might be killed, and I felt that nothing would give me greater pleasure than to attend his funeral.

The thought that Yrotavál might be killed found

permanent lodgment in my mind, and from it I drew what comfort I could.

Meanwhile, what I had said to him seemed to have borne fruit, for in none of his subsequent letters did Luke make any complaint whatsoever about him. His letters were by no means regular or very frequent, but from time to time it seemed that he must let off steam, must get himself down on paper, as he expressed it. I suppose it was a natural, and indeed inevitable, urge to self-expression, for he must have found life terribly restricted and circumscribed.

Although Rosanne's letters were anything but complaining and miserable, were indeed cheerful, it was quite evident that she was still very worried and unhappy about Luke. I told myself that, in the circumstances, it could hardly be otherwise and that life could be no more normal for her than it was for him. She was not the sort of woman to live her own life and go her own way, as it had always been her mother's profession and practice to do ; not the sort of wife to leave a blind husband to his own devices, while she sought amusement and distraction elsewhere. Loving Luke as she did, and having married him to look after him, nurse him, and help him in every possible way, that would be the life she would wish to live and the way she would want to go ; it would be her chief pleasure too—provided Luke responded and the only trouble they had to face was the handicap of his blindness. The *only* trouble ! I felt sick when I thought of the grief and pain that he was causing her.

But I was quite sure that there was something more than this ; that Rosanne had difficulties, troubles and worries of which she was not telling me. I was very

much afraid that instead of doing so, she was taking the view that I had trouble enough of my own without her adding to it, especially as I could do nothing to help her.

One day, however, on return from escort duty with a convoy, I found awaiting me a long-delayed letter of hers, which showed me that I must take drastic and final action, if I were to be Rosanne's friend in deed.

“ . . . So I decided that the end justified the means,” she wrote, *“ and intercepted the next letter addressed to Luke from Morocco.”*

“ It was quite evident that Yrotavál had taken no more notice of what you said to him than to write and warn Luke that if ever he complained to you again, it would be the worse for him ; that ‘ he wouldn’t stand for any of that sort of double-crossing, and that if Luke hadn’t any gratitude for what his old friend and comrade had done for him, he ought to have. Anyway, it would be just too bad for him if he acted that way again. This had nothing to do with brother Mark, and if Luke was the wise guy, he’d leave brother Mark out of it ; and unless a regular salary were paid him there would be trouble. He himself didn’t want to make trouble—never had—but if Luke wanted it, there was plenty of it about ; not only the Big Thing which, even if it didn’t interest the Police, would interest all kind friends and relations—M’Carben Diu, it would !—but one or two other things that might interest the Police a lot. The French Police, that is to say. And had Luke ever heard of a dirty little police-trick called extradition ? They do it for murder. Had Luke forgotten one night at Toulon when a man named Bjelavitch met with an

accident, and did he remember a couple of *copains* called The Spider and The Bull? Because they were still alive, and in possession of all their faculties, especially good memory, and a good thirst too, if Luke would like to do anything for them. Then there was that Corsican bastard, Paggallini. Had Luke forgotten what he did to him? Well, Luke might think that Yrotavál was the only witness of what happened that night, but as a matter of fact, there was another one. . . .

"Then there were further references to other mysterious doings, of which one could not make head or tail. But it is quite clear why Luke is worried. The man has got some sort of hold over him, and is actually blackmailing him. Can you imagine anything more abominable, more fiendishly awful than to attempt to blackmail a blind man? No wonder I always hated the creature instinctively. He must be an absolute monster of cruelty and wickedness.

"What I cannot understand is why Luke should take any notice. If the man were in England, he could hand him over to the Police, of course. As it is, there is nothing he can do. Without for one moment believing that he knows anything really discreditable to Luke, I imagine that he has got hold of something that can be twisted that way; some accusation which Luke would find it impossible to disprove. One has heard of such things, of course, and that it is a regular trade with a certain class of criminal—tricking and trapping people into apparently compromising actions or circumstances, and then blackmailing them. Yet why is Luke so terribly worried and anxious—in fact, it wouldn't be too much to say frightened?

"I think I had better intercept all letters from Yrotavál. It couldn't do any harm; and it certainly doesn't do Luke

any good to receive them. I think all blackmailers should be treated as murderers are ; and those of them who blackmail innocent people who fall into their clutches, and over whom they have got some hold, should be punished more severely still. Hanging is too good for them. Can you conceive of such devilish wickedness as torturing a blind man ? For blackmail is mental torture—the worst kind of all.”

Yes, blackmailers should be treated as murderers are.
This one should be.

§ 2

It's an ill wind that blows no one good, and an ill wind for thousands and thousands of Riffians, as well as for hundreds and hundreds of French soldiers, brought in its hot, dusty, and evil train, a measure of good for me.

A prolonged period of desperate fighting in the Riff Campaign brought me further promotion. My being left, through the death of my superiors, in charge, and in sole command, of a small but important *poste* which I managed to defend successfully, won me another stripe. The first thing that I did when promoted to Sergeant—and in the French Army a Sergeant is an extremely important man, saluted as an Officer by private soldiers—was to appoint Yrotavál my batman.

Fortune favouring me again, I was in charge of a convoy of food and ammunition that, suddenly surrounded and desperately attacked by Chleuchs, I contrived to bring safely through to its destination, a *poste* which, but for its arrival, must have fallen.

To the initiative and ability of two Corporals who had been German Officers in the Great War, and to the desperate valour of the escort of *légionnaires*, the credit for the defence of the convoy is due ; but it was I who reaped their reward, for I was promoted to Sergeant-Major.

Doubtless my record as a Legion Volunteer in the Great War, my Guards' training, my rejoining the Legion, and my consistent good luck in this campaign, contributed to this quick promotion.

But far greater good than this, the ill wind of War blew me ; for it kept me occupied, not only occupied and busy from morning till night, but so over-worked and over-strained that I had no time for worrying. I was constantly so mentally and physically employed, and so weary when the opportunity for sleep came, that I had no time for private grief and misery by day and slept like a log the moment my head touched the pillow, or more often the pack, on which it rested.

It was the hardest part of a hard campaign, and the Legion as usual bore the brunt of it. When my battalion was, for very shame on the part of the authorities, withdrawn to rest and re-fit at the Fez camp, we marched from our place in the *groupe mobile*, a ragged regiment of scarecrows, our clothes in rags, our toes through our boots, gaunt, hungry, diseased, strained to breaking-point, and everything but daunted and defeated.

After a brief space for recuperation, refitting and reinforcement, we marched out again to the scene of what was now a guerrilla war of infiltration and attrition ; and, a few months later, I again found

myself in temporary command of an advanced *poste* in mountainous country.

My garrison of two Sergeants, eight Corporals and fifty men, of course included my faithful batman Yrotavál.

Life in Fort Boulanger quickly settled down to a dreary monotony of hardship, short commons, long days and weeks of dreadful dullness broken only by occasional sudden and swift attacks by the bold and hardy warriors into whose mountain fastnesses the French forces were thus "peacefully penetrating."

In spite of the stagnation of the war, we were sniped by day and our sentries occasionally stabbed by night ; we could only go outside our mortarless stone walls with proper military protection as though moving in open warfare through enemy country ; and the water-party, which daily went to a neighbouring stream with half a dozen mules and a dozen sixty-litre barrels, must always have its route picketed and be accompanied by a strong escort.

Nevertheless, life was, as I say, dreary and monotonous beyond belief and almost beyond bearing. There were many cases of *cafard*, and I am not certain that I was very far from it myself.

And Yrotavál was busy again.

Yrotavál was hatching something. He was in funds, and each convoy that reached us bringing our precious, nay priceless, wine and tobacco, our cases of monkey-meat as the French *poilu* calls bully-beef, our biscuits, coffee and sugar, our ammunition and our letters, evidently brought him good news and good money. Our Yrotavál was becoming a personage, apart from his importance and prestige as the acting Commandant's batman.

He had money to burn, money for wine, money to hire the services of the penniless.

Luke's money.

And although here I was monarch of all I surveyed and (were I the average and normal *légionnaire*) should have had every reason for satisfaction, contentment and happiness as a successful man whom kindly Fortune had carried to the top of his tree, I was far worse off than when, under authority, I was over-driven, over-worked and harried almost to death. In this relatively peaceful interlude, when life for me was quiet and easy, though responsible, I should have been happy. In point of fact, I was more wretched and uneasy, more anxious and miserable, than I had been during the months of mobile and "open" warfare, when the campaign was at its fiercest, life at its hardest and most dangerous.

I had too much time to think, too much time in which to read, and re-read, and brood over, Luke's letters—and Rosanne's.

All was not well at Courtesy Court and Rosanne was not happy. Very far from it.

§ 3

And one day, after we had been in Fort Boulanger for months that seemed like years, I got, in a batch of others from her and Luke, a letter from Rosanne which told me that Yrotavál had written to Luke telling him that I had reviled and threatened him for attempted blackmail, and announcing that, whereas he had promised me he would never do it again, it was now up to Luke, if he valued his peace, safety and happiness

and anything else, to make special amends—in cash. Unless he wanted to be exposed, to his wife and brother, he had better keep his trap shut on the subject of blackmail, and never try that sort of game again and never admit that he, Luke, was getting any letters whatsoever from him, Yrotavál.

And reading between the lines of Luke's latest, it was perfectly certain that that was the position ; that Luke wanted me to know that he was still being blackmailed, but even more wanted me to understand that I must not let Yrotavál know that Luke had again complained to me of what was going on.

Obviously Luke was anxious, frightened, nay terrified ; and equally obviously, Rosanne knew it and was just as anxious, frightened and terrified on his behalf.

And there was Yrotavál all about me, pervading and poisoning the atmosphere I breathed, my batman in closest hourly touch with me.

And I bore it. How, I know not.

XVIII

I AM, I admit, a little slow in making up my mind, but once it is made up, my decision stands.

Three events which happened almost simultaneously combined finally to decide the problem of Yrotavál. Rosanne's latest letter, Yrotavál's intention to desert from the *poste*, and Yrotavál's knife.

As usual I had kept this letter until I could read it in some measure of peace and privacy. As convoys had arrived with some regularity and letters had not accumulated, there was only this one. I took it to my quarters, my mortarless stone-walled, earth-floored room in the long one-storey *caserne* in which we all lived, closed the door, sat down on my ammunition-box bed, read it from end to end, and in great perturbation, rose to my feet, subconsciously impelled to do something . . . something . . . anything . . . though there was nothing that I could do.

I was not in the best of health, and, owing partly to fever and dysentery, partly to the reading of the letter, my hands trembled and shook, and the letter fell from my twitching fingers. Quickly I stooped to recover it, and as I did so, something struck the door with a thud.

As I rose from my stooping position, I saw that a long-bladed heavy knife was deeply embedded in the door at about the level of my heart. It must have

passed above my bent back, missing me by an inch or so, as I stooped for the letter. It must have been thrown through the glassless window opposite the door. Knowing that it was quite useless to do so, I nevertheless flung the door open, dashed round the corner of the *caserne*, along the short side of the building, and looked to see who might be between the *caserne* and the wall of the fort.

No one, of course. It would have been an idiotic idea, had I entertained it, that I was likely to see Yrotavál running for his life or standing about looking innocent, and chatting with some kindred spirit who would provide him with a few minutes' alibi.

Hurrying along to the door of the *caserne*, I looked into the big *chambrée* which was the Section's dormitory. It was empty, of course.

A hasty tour of the *poste* showed that Yrotavál was not in the cook-house, store-room, N.C.O.s quarters, nor apparently anywhere else. Running to the gate, I asked the sentry if anyone had come in or out during the last five minutes. No one. I then made a quick tour of the walls and questioned the sentries at the four corners. With apparent truthfulness and some surprise, they assured me that no one had dropped down over the wall during the last few minutes, nor at any time since they had been posted. With equal certainty they assured me that neither had anyone climbed up over the wall and into the *poste*.

Evidently Yrotavál had cleverly evaded a sentry and got away while his back was turned; or else was, equally cleverly, hiding within its walls.

Well, it didn't much matter. I knew that it was he who had attempted to murder me, and but for my sudden stoop would have succeeded. He alone had the

motive to do so, and the skill to throw a knife with such accuracy and force.

Returning to my cubicle, I pulled the knife out of the wood ; and it required considerable effort to do it.

Naturally, it was not Yrotavál's knife. I recognized it as Dreiner's, the one he used as a wood-working tool—a deadly weapon with a long, strong, double-edged blade and sharp point, a very heavy handle and a spring device whereby the blade could be prevented from closing into the handle.

Had I not suddenly bent to pick up that letter, with my face toward the door, that knife would now be planted to the handle below my left shoulder, the blade through my heart.

I remembered how Corporal Bjelavitch had been found in the gutter of a slum in the sailors' quarter of Toulon, with the handle of just such a knife protruding from his broad back.

Well thrown, Yrotavál ! . . . Well saved, Rosanne ! . . . And I laughed with a sense of happiness compounded of gratitude and relief. Gratitude to God and Rosanne. Relief that, once and for all, for good or for ill, the problem of Yrotavál was settled.

The knife and the letter had combined to put an end to anxiety, worry and indecision.

The letter was as follows :

DARLING MARK,

This really is an S.O.S., but what is the use of my sending it when you are too far away to help me. Oh Mark, why did you go, and why did you cut yourself off so completely and for so long ? When, when, when will you come back ?

I am at my wits' end, and just about at the end of my tether too. I can't tell you how terrible things are here now; and I don't think I would if I could. And Yrotavál has written to Luke to say that he can expect him to arrive at Courtesy Court quite soon now, as he has completed—with the help of Luke's money—all arrangements for deserting successfully when you return to Fez. He says he has disguises and a fast car. . . . Luke is dreadful nowadays . . . I am ashamed of myself to be writing to you like this, but I have simply got to do it. I must, or I shall go mad. No, I shan't do that, but I shall break down. To whom can I turn but you—although you are so far away? You have always been my tower of strength. You have always been there. One has always felt you were there, either for immediate help or in the last resort.

And, oh Mark, this is the last resort, and even though you cannot help me, I am helping myself by writing to you. I can't tell you everything. I won't! But, oh Mark, if you can come, do. If you can help me, help me. I pray you to. Something has happened to Luke. He has gone utterly and completely to pieces. Mark, it is as though he is going mad. Really mad, I mean. He seems to be terrified literally to a condition of insanity.

Mark, it is terrible. It is heart-rending, and yet at the same time—oh, I can't write it—but he . . .

And, oh Mark, there is something else.

But that is my trouble, and I will say nothing about it—though I feel I would give years of my life to come to you and tell you. I won't post this wretched letter . . .

There was much more like this. Something had happened. Something terrible. And it had happened to Luke—and through Luke to Rosanne.

Yrotavál?

I felt cold and sick and horror-stricken.

Could I have been mistaken about Luke? Could he through genuine blindness have met with some accident? Run over? . . . Burnt? . . .

Of course not. He *wasn't* blind.

No blind man can read a book, and turn page after page, then turn back to read something and compare statements, then pick up a pencil from a table, underline two or three sentences, and write something in the margin of the book. No man can slowly and carefully and accurately make a swoop with his hand and catch an ordinary house-fly that has silently settled on the top of his book. Utterly impossible and absurd.

Besides—Yrotavál. Had the faintest shadow of doubt remained in my mind, his story would have removed it completely.

And had I never seen what I had seen through Luke's window, and had I had no evidence save Yrotavál's confession of complicity in Luke's deception—was not that amply confirmed by Luke's submission to his blackmail, by Luke's attitude to him, and by Yrotavál's own attitude of security, power, and importance at Courtesy Court?

No, of course Luke was not blind. What had happened was that he had at last broken down under some threat of Yrotavál's, some monstrous increase of blackmailing pressure.

What Luke was doing was fighting, struggling, *acting*—to prove to Rosanne and the rest of his world that he really was blind. Fear is the deadliest microbe that attacks the mind of man, the most poisonous, destructive, fatal. And as the poisoned mind suffers and deteriorates, so does the body. Fear kills; mind,

body, and soul. Fear was killing Luke, driving him mad.

Yrotavál was killing Luke.

And, a few minutes ago, Yrotavál had almost killed me.

And Yrotavál had reduced Rosanne to a state of stricken misery, grief and agony of mind.

Yrotavál !

XIX

THE indecision ended, my mind at peace, my determination irrevocable, my will adamant, I acted quickly.

Next morning, I marched as in a dream along the mountain path, preceded by Yrotavál whom I had ordered to accompany me on a short expedition from the *poste*. He was unarmed but carried entrenching tools.

In spite of my fierce determination, unalterable purpose, and my grim errand, I marched, as I say, in a dream, myself walking beside myself, wondering at me, at what I was about to do, and the manner in which I intended to do it.

Arrived at a spot which I decided was suitable, deep in the live-oak forest, out of sight of the *poste*, I gave the order.

"Halt! . . . About turn! . . . Ground entrenching tools! Stand properly to attention!"

With the promptitude of the old soldier, Yrotavál, whatever may have been his surprise, obeyed.

"Yrotavál," said I, "you attempted to murder me yesterday. *Silence!* You are doing something worse than murder, to my brother. You have driven him to insanity, perhaps suicide. You actually did murder Corporal Bjelavitch and Sergeant Paggallini, and by

your own account you have murdered other men. Any Court of Law before which you were tried would convict you and sentence you to death. I am now going to take the Law into my own hands. I sentence you to death."

"*It is murder!*" shouted Yrotavál, as I drew my revolver from its holster.

"*Silence! Stand back!*" And I levelled my revolver at his face. "Murder or not, I'm going to kill you—as you tried to kill me."

"You can't prove . . ." began Yrotavál, his voice high and hoarse.

"No. I can't. Though I know it; and you know it. But I am not killing you for that. I . . ."

"*It is murder! Murder!* . . ." screamed Yrotavál. "You talk about *me* being a murderer and . . ."

"Murder or execution, Yrotavál, I'm going to kill you now. . . . Even if it brings me down to your level. I have warned you. I have tried to stop you. You've been blackmailing my brother again. . . ."

"*It's a lie. It's a lie.* I haven't written a word since . . ."

"That's enough. I know that you have. It was you who persuaded him to sham blindness and you've blackmailed him ever since."

"*It's a lie.* He began it. He asked me to sham deaf and dumb and . . ."

"You yourself admitted that it was your idea. You yourself admitted blackmailing him and . . ."

"*I stopped.* I stopped it when you . . ."

"About turn!" I roared, and, so strong was the habit of years, the force of mechanical instinct, that Yrotavál obeyed.

Should I bid him kneel? Should I bid him pray? Yrotavál kneel! Yrotavál pray! I thought of Luke. I thought of Rosanne—and pulled the trigger.

With a convulsive jerk and jump he fell forward. Placing the muzzle of my revolver to his ear, I shot him again.

With the entrenching tools I made a shallow grave, thrust his body into it, shovelled the earth and gravel back into the hole, and covered the place with large loose stones.

I was cool, nay cold, collected in mind and calm in spirit.

Having finished my task, I marched back to the *poste*, taking with me the light pick and shovel.

On the way, I visited the sentry-groups posted to guard the passage of the water-fatigue party to the stream.

"Did you hear a shot?" I asked Corporal Mallen, the American tough guy and Bad Man, for whom I had much admiration and a high regard.

"Sure, Sergeant," he said. "Two."

"*Légionnaire* Yrotavál has been shot," I informed him.

Corporal Mallen appeared to bear the bad news bravely.

"Isn't that just too bad!" he said.

As I turned away and he saluted, a smile flickered for an instant across his grim face.

§ 2

I slept particularly well that night, perhaps because I felt that I had done something that might enable

Luke and Rosanne to sleep their nights through also in peace.

Next morning, as I sat at the egg-box table in my dry-stone, earth-floored cell, I looked up to see Corporal Mallen standing in the doorway like a statue at the salute.

"Come in," said I. "What now, Mallen?"

"*Légionnaire* Dreiner has a request to make, *mon Commandant*."

When we were being formal and official, Corporal Mallen always addressed me thus, though when alone, marching at ease with our minds off duty, so to speak, we talked as man to man rather than as insect to tin god.

"*Cafard*?" I asked, knowing my Dreiner.

"Nothing special," smiled Mallen. "Only wants to erect a tomb-stone to the late, unlamented *Légionnaire* Yrotavál, and to conduct a service over his grave!"

This Dreiner, called The Pastor, of whom I have already made mention, was an interesting man whom I liked as much as I pitied; one of those gentle simple Swiss who are so transparently honest and straightforward that one marvels how any of them survive in the wicked world outside their own villages.

One's chief wonder concerning him was how on earth he ever got to the Legion or found himself in the position that made such a step seem advisable. A love-affair probably.

Never, I imagine, of very strong intelligence, his mind, affected by the War and Legion service, was now definitely feeble. A very good soldier indeed, he was queer, and lived in an almost permanent state of *cafard*. With him as with me, it was a case of occupation being salvation, and he was quite happy when on

duty, on the march, or busy with his *astiquage* and fatigues. At other times he was miserable, morose, and depressed to the point of madness, save when he was doing something with a knife and a piece of wood. He had been a wood-carver as well as a preacher and was invaluable as a handy-man during the construction of a *poste*. He could make doorways, window-frames and simple furniture as well and quickly as a carpenter.

He was not the kind of man to boast of anything, but had he wished to do so, he could have boasted that the grave of every one of his comrades who had been killed, save in battle or on the march, had been marked by a well-made cross on which at least the name and *matricule* number had been neatly and deeply carved.

In the case of friends or comrades whom he had approved, there would frequently be a text or some brief encomium. Such were "*God is Love*"; "*He giveth His beloved sleep*"; "*Requiescat in Pace*"; "*The Bravest of the Brave*"; "*A Noble Comrade*"; or "*Mort sur le Champ d'Honneur*." When possible, he would carve this text or epitaph in the language of the country of the dead man.

"Certainly," said I. "Anything to keep poor Dreiner happy. Bring him along."

A minute or two later the two reappeared at the door of my hut, or hutch, and saluted like guardsmen.

"*Le légionnaire* Dreiner to speak with *Monsieur le Commandant*," announced Mallen.

"Well, Dreiner?" said I, studying the curiously Christ-like bearded face of this gentle and kindly Swiss who must have killed hundreds of his fellow-men, thinking as I did so of Luke and myself at Oberam-mergau and of Anton Lang, the famous actor who took the Christ part in the Passion Play.

"So you want to make a cross for Yrotavál's grave?"

"*Oui, mon Commandant, je vous en prie.* I have never failed a comrade yet. Not when he died at a *poste* or in camp, so to speak."

"Was Yrotavál a friend of yours?"

"*Mais non, mon Commandant. Au contraire!* But he was of the Legion, and a comrade though not a friend. I should not like to fail him, especially as he was killed by the enemy."

"Excellent," said I. "Yrotavál was, as you say, of the Legion—and he was killed by an enemy. Have you decided on his epitaph?"

"I have decided that there shall be no epitaph, *mon Commandant*. A text would be inappropriate, for he was an enemy of God. Nor can I praise him. But I will not blame him. What was Yrotavál when he was alive? He was Yrotavál. What is Yrotavál now that he is dead? He is still Yrotavál. Then let his name be his epitaph, and, at his graveside, let me say a prayer for his soul. *Mon Commandant*, I often think. . . ."

"Silence!" cut in Mallen quietly. "You haven't come here to think but to ask the Commandant's permission to make a cross for Yrotavál."

Mallen was neither brutal nor harsh, and he was not unkindly; but he knew his Dreiner, and that unless he were cut short, he would, in Mallen's idiom, be delivered of a mouthful and myself enriched by an earful and then some.

"Very good, Dreiner," said I. "You make Yrotavál the best cross you can, and carve his name on it; and we'll give him a military funeral—and you shall conduct a short service."

"Plant the old bastard good and proper, in fact," I heard Mallen observe while marching Dreiner from the Presence.

Considering the difficulty of tools and materials, Dreiner made an admirable job of it ; and, partly for something to break the monotony of life at Poste Boulanger, partly as a reward and encouragement and tonic to poor Dreiner, partly in a cynic spirit of bitterness that would have amused Luke, I gave orders that the placing of the memorial cross should be an official function and parade, although Yrotavál himself was already well and truly interred ; in short, that he should have a solemn and official, if belated, military funeral.

Soon after morning Stand-to, I sent out skirmishing and scouting parties, made reasonably sure that there were no Riffians in the neighbourhood, and then, after posting sentries and taking all precautions against surprise, I ordered Corporal Mallen to parade, as a funeral-party, all who were not on duty.

It was one of the weirdest occasions of my life, and looking back, I realized that whatever Dreiner may have been, I was myself more than a little mad, suffering from more than a slight attack of *cafard*.

As the funeral cortège marched from the *poste*, with Dreiner carrying the cross and looking more than ever like the unique actor of Oberammergau, I wondered whether, ever before in the history of the world, such a ceremony had been conducted in such a way, such a cortège marched to a grave, bearing the cross of a murdered man, with his murderer, in the post of honour, bringing up the rear.

And the end of the ceremony was truly worthy of it.

After Dreiner and his two assistants had, with spade and mattock, firmly planted the well-made cross at the head of the grave in which I had buried Yrotavál, I gave Dreiner permission briefly to recite a Burial Service and offer up a prayer.

It was most moving and pathetic. Poor Dreiner ! Evidently he had once been an eloquent and impassioned preacher of the revivalist type. He had also conducted many Burial Services. . . . When he began to wave his arms, froth at the mouth, and wax incoherent in prayer and exhortation, Mallen laid a hand upon his wrist and whispered to him to conclude the Service. Like one awakening from a dream, Dreiner, with a simple dignity, ceased to pray and orate, quietly said the "*Au Père, au Fils, au Saint Esprit*" valediction, observed that, after all, it was the undeniable truth that Yrotavál was an old soldier who had fought for France and died in French uniform far from his native land—and then collapsed.

At Mallen's orders, the party fired a volley and then, with arms at the Present, saluted the memory of the dead.

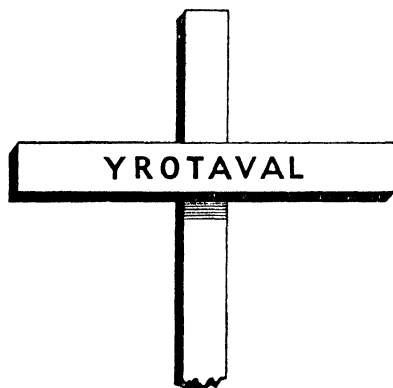
As we left the hallowed spot, I gave the order *March at Ease*, and, when I did so, Corporal Mallen fell back from his position, saluted and joined me.

"Just glance back, Sir, will you?" he said, a wry smile curling his tight mouth, a twinkle of humour lighting his cold grey eye.

I looked round.

In the level morning rays of the African sun, the cross stood out boldly against the dark mountain background of grey stone and tree trunk.

From the cross stood out starkly the one word,



"Read it backward," said Mallen, and hurried off to his place at the head of the funeral cortège.

Luke's humour! . . .

Luke's voice here in the heart of the Atlas Mountains. . . .

So "Yrotavál" had an epitaph after all. Suitably and appropriately provided by Luke.

XX

“ **H**OW does it feel to be a murderer ? ” I imagine it depends to a great extent on the murder, the murdered man and the murderer himself. Speaking for myself, with apologies to all moralists, I experienced a feeling of the utmost relief and, believe it or not, a sense of satisfaction, of something accomplished, something done, to earn a life's repose for Luke and Rosanne.

I had committed a murder, the brand of Cain was on my brow, and I was prepared to wear that brand, if not as an honourable scar, at least as a spot and blemish that worried me not at all.

From that day to this, I have never felt one twinge of remorse or of regret. In cold blood I killed Yrotavál. In cold blood I would kill him again, in similar circumstances.

Doubtless my years of war, my training in bayonet-fighting, my sniper's practice, my life in the trenches, my daily experience of death, mutilation and horrors unspeakable, have blunted my sensibilities, have caused a deterioration of my moral fibre and weakened my respect for the sacredness of human life.

At any rate, I have, I hope and believe, remained honest, and I honestly and truthfully admit that I have no horror, no spiritual fears and forebodings in the matter of my killing Yrotavál. And time having

enabled me to see the matter in perspective, to regard it calmly and dispassionately, I know now that I did not so much take the Law into my own hands and presume to punish Yrotavál for what he had done, as assume the right and duty of protecting Luke from a danger which to him would be worse than death, and Rosanne from the destruction of her happiness—at the cost of taking human life. To call Yrotavál human.

No, I have no regrets, no remorse and not the slightest sense of a need for repentance.

§ 2

I could begin here and write a big book about my further experiences and adventures in the Riff Campaign but have no intention of doing so. In fact, having made my confession, I shall not write more. I have done what I set out to do, and it has been painful. Nevertheless, I feel the better for it.

What would be even more painful would be to dwell upon what happened shortly after Yrotavál's death.

The Chleuchs cut the lines of communication between our *poste*, Fort Boulanger, and the base, and besieged us, with the result that not only did we nearly all die of starvation and the strain of constant siege, but, until the *poste* was relieved, we received no letters.

When at last these came, one from Rosanne, almost incoherent in its horror, misery, and grief, brought me the news that had more than a little to do with the fact that I left Fort Boulanger—scene of so much suffering and agony of mind, scene of battle, murder and sudden death, literally of murder, so far as I was concerned—

on a stretcher, and that I have no knowledge of how I eventually reached the Base Hospital at Fez.

No, I'll write no more—save to say that in that letter poor Rosanne contrived to tell me what she had to tell concerning Luke.

*"Then I spake unto God in my grief: My wine and my bread
And my staff Thou hast taken from me—my friend who is dead."
(Shane Leslie).*

Mark Caldon Tuyler's manuscript here ends thus abruptly.

II

LUKE RIVERS TUYLER

I

SO they have given me a typewriter to play with. A special machine with rubber caps on the keys, each letter nicely embossed, that my finger-tips may learn to distinguish it!

Pity the Blind.

What shall I write?

Apologia pro vita mea?

I don't know that I really have so very much for which to apologize, after all. Or perhaps I will amend this by saying that doubtless I have, like everybody else, a good deal for which to apologize; but that I have had good cause and reason—or, rather terrible cause and reason—for what I have done.

At school, we had a somewhat self-righteous, somewhat pompous old fool of a master, who was full of such counsels of perfection as "*Never explain*"; or again, "*Justify yourself to yourself and to nobody else,*" and, one that was his especial favourite, and which he repeated *ad nauseam*, like a parrot, "*Blame yourself.*"

Why should one blame oneself, if the blame lies elsewhere? Why should not one justify oneself, since Justice is desirable? And why should one never explain, when explanation is obviously indicated?

A pretty mess and muddle one would make of one's affairs and of one's life, if one were careful never to explain. I can conceive no better method of creating

every sort and kind of misconception, misunderstanding and impasse. So, without any idea of white-washing myself, or of hypocritically assuming blame that is not my due, I am going to explain why I did—what I did.

And I will begin at the beginning of my life, for that is where the chain of causality starts—so far as our own free-will influences our lives that is, and our own rough-hewing of our ends affects their shape.

I will, to the best of my ability, avoid casuistry ; and I freely admit that our acts our angels are, our fatal shadows that walk by us still.

I used to know an amusing, cynical chap in the French Foreign Legion, a Belgian named Rassedín who, seeing a devout Dutch youth praying very busily beside his bed one night, remarked to me,

“ I never have prayed and I never shall, but if I ever did offer up a prayer, it would begin like that lovely one that the Pharisee prayed in the temple—

“ God, I thank Thee that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.”

Personally I do not return thanks that I am better than other men, but I *am* definitely glad that, in one or two ways, I differ from the very vast majority. There is no sense in denying obvious facts about oneself, nor indulging in stupid false modesty—such as distinguishes dear old Mark, for example.

So I freely admit that I have been blessed, not only with a great gift, but also with a great advantage ; the gift being my marked psychic power, and the advantage my undeniable membership of both of the two classes into which men are divided, the physical and the mental—the low-brow and the high-brow. For I

have been endowed with the physique of an athlete and with the intelligence, perception and understanding of an artist, and I am a painter, a poet, a musician, an essayist and a story-writer.

Perhaps I can best indicate this wonderful advantage with which I have been blessed, and for which of course I take no personal credit, by mentioning that, had I worked my hardest when at School, I could undoubtedly have won a scholarship ; and that had I played my hardest, I could have been Captain of Cricket and Captain of Football, as well as Captain of the School. Also, had I remained at Oxford and chosen to work my hardest and to play my hardest, I could easily have got a Double First and a Double Blue—and the man who can do this is, I submit, unusual, to say the least of it.

And let me make it clear once again, that besides being an artist to my finger-tips, I am abnormally psychic. For this explains a very great deal—and it is at honest explanation that I here aim.

Of my great *advantage*, my combined physical and mental endowment, I only become gradually aware ; but from very early childhood I was cognizant of my *gift*, my psychic power to see and hear what are known as ghosts ; and to dream amazingly interesting dreams that were sometimes prophetic, that were sometimes glimpses of what was happening elsewhere at the time of dreaming, and that were sometimes what must have been absolutely accurate pictures of events that had happened in the past, whether recent or far-distant.

And then, from a very early age, I occasionally saw visions as well.

By this I don't imply that I, like so very many other children, merely fell into brown studies, as they

are called, and indulged in idle day-dreams. I mean that I had real objective, conscious experiences.

I'll give you an example of this :

I will describe the phenomenon exactly as I saw it, and I shall ask none, and shall expect few, unreservedly to believe my statement.

To such kindly folk as will say soothingly, with a large-minded tolerance and forbearance,

"Yes, yes, my good Luke Tuyler, we are quite sure you think you are speaking the truth as you remember it ; but memory is a very tricky thing, and it all happened a very long time ago," I reply most gratefully,

"It is very good of you to make allowances. The fact remains, however. And memory is not a tricky thing when it is renewed and renewed again ; when one thinks of the event repeatedly, frequently ; and when, time after time, one recapitulates its every detail without change ; and can shut one's eyes and see it again as clearly as the actual scene that was plainly before one at the time of happening."

In point of fact, I am not greatly concerned as to whether my account of this vision is believed or not. But nevertheless, I shall write it down, as I shall write whatever else interests me, for my own satisfaction and justification.

§ 2

When I was a very small boy, my brother Mark and I were taken by our nurse, nursemaid and governess, as usual, for a long summer holiday by the sea. Young as I was, I enjoyed the most conscious awareness of the utter and unutterable beauty of sea and sky and sands, the last, at low tide, apparently illimitable.

I did not use this kind of language, of course, as a small boy, but looking back, I know that even then I was, as I have said, an artist to my finger-tips, full to the brim of artistic appreciation and delight in beauty.

I have only written two slim volumes of poetry hitherto, or, to be exact (and in this *apologia* I passionately desire to be exact in every detail), I should say I have only published two volumes of my collected poems. But I have written hundreds of poems, short and long, and at this place, especially at dawn of a perfect day, I was undeniably endowed and endued with the authentic poetic fire and the yearning to express in words the feelings that filled my soul, the appreciation of the ineffable beauty of Nature here displayed.

So far behind me now, so far from me to-day, is that high capacity for that fine frenzy, that I have a curious sense of shame in confessing to it, and in writing of it here. But the fact remains.

In the mornings, I did not get out at dawn, or as early thereafter as I could, in order that, equipped with spade and pail and shrimping-net, I might build sand-castles or pursue the minor fauna of the deep. These things I did, and did with zest, later in the day, with Mark and other young barbarians at play; but in the early mornings there, I would arise, dress myself and, noiselessly escaping from our bedroom and the house, go across the road to the beach (praying that I might have it to myself) and simply . . . gaze.

I would gaze—myself the very least and lowest of artists—as does a great artist on a great picture.

I had no desire to do anything but look; and I was, doubtless, completely unconscious of that desire and of the fact that I yearned to steep my soul in

beauty, in unsullied pure loveliness ; fill myself with it, and at the same time, enter into it : and be one with it.

Of course, I was conscious of nothing of the sort. All I knew was that I loved to see these illimitable sands and sea and sky at dawn, and especially at time of low tide when there was an added beauty, a fourth element, as it were, besides the sky and sea and sand—a combination of the last two, a rippled, pool-adorned, wave-marked, boundless tract that was neither sand nor sea.

And one day, walking to the edge of this ephemeral lovely realm that was neither land nor water, but born immaculate of both, I beheld my first vision.

A dream dreamt by a sleepy little boy who had risen from his bed at early dawn, and had naturally and unconsciously lain himself down with a yawn to sleep again ? On sands so wet that every foot-print filled immediately with water ? Lain down, where to stand still was to sink a little ? Lain down at the water's edge, where the turning tide would lap about him and in a few minutes cover him ?

No, that is all patently absurd.

Do believe me when I say that there is no question, no possibility, of my having slept and dreamed. On the contrary, I was walking along the water's edge, barefooted, wondering whether I should catch the tide in the very act of turning—a thing I loved to try to do—and enjoying with my whole being, and with a pleasure denied to adults, the simple sweet and lovely delights provided by every sense ; sight providing the joy of the marvellous colouring of golden sand, palely blue sky, greenly blue sea, goldenly yellow gorse, and distant green-tipped snow-white cliff : smell providing the joy of that unparagoned scent, compact

of ozone, salt and sea-weed : touch giving the delight of the caress of the light breeze on cheek and neck and naked limb, of soft wet sand and cool water on foot and ankle : sound enchanting the ear with merry music of the little ripples, the happy baby waves, the pleasing soothing susurrus of the gentle back-drag of the tiny pebbles of the occasional patches of fine shingle : and the sense of taste providing the sweetness of the faint flavour of the air and the tang of salt upon the lips.

Awake ? Conscious ? I was as widely awake, as keenly aware, as truly and actively conscious, as ever I have been in all my life.

And, suddenly lifting up mine eyes and looking out to sea, I beheld—the Ship.

It was as real and actual as any ship that ever I saw in all my life. Not a phantom ship, such as the Flying Dutchman, but concrete and solid-seeming. It was about the size of one of those life-boats carried by liners, and optimistically labelled as “For the accommodation of 56 persons.” Perhaps it was a little bigger. And it was of a different shape, inasmuch as the high bows were extended to be themselves their own figure-head, crudely dragon-like, and the stern was square and also high. The short, stumpy mast supported a long yard and a heavy sail, torn, stained and dirty, of which some device had been roughly limned in tar and red paint, a bird or beast or dragon. Over each gunwale hung a row of shields, whether of wood, or hide stretched over metal, I could not be sure ; for they were dirty, sodden, and salt-encrusted.

Seated on the thwarts of this boat or long-ship, their backs to me, were two rows of oarsmen. Standing up in the stern was the helmsman who grasped a tiller, or perhaps a long and heavy oar resting in a deep niche

or rowlock and serving as a rudder. Other men of better sort and superior rank stood in the bows, sat in the stern, or moved, balancing themselves between the thwarts.

Now what interests me most of all perhaps about this vision is the fact that it was evident and present as much to the ear as to the eye. For suddenly I heard a man shout a command, the heavy sail was let down with a noisy run, and, a little later, at another order which was distinctly audible, the rowers backed water.

Every sound was natural, loud, and clear ; and they were precisely those that one always hears when a big boat or small yacht is thus handled. There was nothing whatever silent or ghostly about this ship and its crew.

Soon it grounded gently in shallow water, and the attention of its occupants turned to a man whom hitherto I had not noticed. He half lay on the stretchers or bottom-boards, half leant against the mast, until a man, standing beside the helmsman, pointed at him and gave another peremptory order, whereupon three or four of the crew pulled him roughly to his feet and thrust him headlong overboard into the shallow water. There were loud shouts of rude laughter, as the man, apparently revived by the cold douche, rose painfully to his feet, staggered ashore, and collapsed at the water's edge. A seaman in the bows, thereupon picking up a pole or boat-hook, thrust the boat off. The rowers plied their long heavy oars, the helmsman put the tiller over, the sail was again hoisted, and the boat made out to sea.

Now, it is another very interesting fact that it did not vanish like the morning mist, or suddenly

disappear as does the figment of a dream when the sleeper awakes. It "proceeded," as they say in the Navy. It simply sailed away like any other boat.

The man left behind was lying in the posture of the Dying Gladiator, and turning to him, I realized that he was either badly wounded or mortally sick.

As I stared—not frightened, bemused or amazed, but accepting the whole impossible affair as the right and proper sort of thing to happen, just after the pearly dawn of a perfect lovely morning by that magic faery sea—the wounded or dying man raised himself on his elbow and looked straight at me.

In my memory it is no vague and nebulous dream-face. I can see it now, and most distinctly ; bronzed, weather-beaten, lined and deeply wrinkled beside the eyes ; the moustache and beard fair ; the hair long and unkempt, and, where it protruded from beneath a rusty iron head-piece like a skull-cap, it was bleached to a still lighter hue than that of the moustache and beard ; the face and head, save for the long locks, just such as one might see any day on the quay of a Devon fishing-village.

And here enters a somewhat incongruous element which seems to me to protrude into this realm of Vision from that of Dream. For the man now spoke, using what language I know not, presumably some Norse tongue, and I clearly understood what he said.

It would have been normal and usual enough, had I been dreaming, for a foreigner whose own language would actually be some form of early Scandinavian, to speak modern English ; but this queer fact does not fit in with the Vision, and spoils otherwise simple and acceptable theories.

What I saw in the Vision were real things. What

I heard were real sounds. But reality ceases when a Viking speaks modern English.

It is possible, of course, that the man did not really speak English at all, but his own Norwegian or Danish, and that I was given the power to understand his meaning, in some occult and inexplicable pentecostal fashion. The simplest solution lies in the theory that there was telepathic communication between his mind and my own; though, on the other hand, I freely admit that I may well be mistaken as to this detail, and after the lapse of so many years, I may have forgotten the relevant facts on this one point. But, as I remember it, the man distinctly uttered the following words, plainly understood by me :

*" Battle in strength and strive in guile if you must !
But beware the arrow that you shoot at the sky."*

I know that that was the message he gave me ; and I believe, as surely as I believe in Beauty, in Love, and in Death, that he said these words to me.

As he said them, his eyes seemed to film over. They closed, and his head sank down upon his arms.

Filled with pity, the deepest sympathy and some alarm—not at these supernatural and fantastic happenings—but at the sight of a man dying as I knew this Viking to be, I sprang forward with outstretched hands and . . . he was not there. There was nothing there at all, and I was standing stupidly, my extended arms and empty hands pointing at the equally empty sand at my feet.

Quickly I looked to where the ship should have been tacking toward the horizon ; but the ship had now disappeared as well.

This is the simple truth of what happened to me that morning, an exact account of what I saw, of

what I heard, and of what I did. I have never forgotten it. And I can still, to this day, see and describe every detail of the ship and of the men: and I can give a faithful eye-witness account of the event—for an eye-witness I was.

The explanation? It is gratuitous folly to try to explain the inexplicable. It is a waste of time, albeit an attractive and interesting way of wasting it, to speculate concerning the cause of such a phenomenon, to wonder whether the Time Machine slipped a cog, and I then saw something that had actually happened exactly there in Space, but a thousand years ago in Time. Doubtless Professor Einstein could shed a little helpful light on the subject.

Did my Unconscious Mind, which, throughout my whole life, has been inclined to be officious and self-assertive, produce from the depths of its immeasurable and inexhaustible store of personal, family, and tribal history, actual knowledge of this real incident and cause the physical retina to behold what was in the mind's eye? Did the time and the place (and the anniversary, perhaps?) cause the Unconscious Mind to perform one of its incalculable and apparently miraculous gambols?

Or was it a ghost ship manned by ghosts?

This last suggestion I reject. It was too stout a ship, and the sounds made by its oars and the fall of its yard and sail, too real; the men too loud and hearty and of too too solid flesh; the whole event too simply normal and natural—save for its utter super-normality and super-naturalness.

But for the incident of the man who spoke to me and died, I should, looking back upon it, endeavour to imagine that I had been hoaxed by a boat-load of

fishermen masquerading in strange disguise and in a strange boat.

What, I wonder, would have been the result had I possessed and used a camera when that ship of my Vision dropped sail and grounded gently not fifty yards from where I stood? Presumably the film would have been no less sensitive than the retina of my eye, and would similarly have recorded the image :

Now I have told the true story of this Vision at some length, for two reasons: first, that you may understand how differently constituted is my make-up, physically speaking, from that of the average man ; and secondly, that I may tell you of Mark's reaction to my account of it.

He flatly refused to believe a word of my story when I returned to the house and told him all about it !

He did not call me a little liar, as some brothers might have done, but he enjoyed and approved the story *as a story*. When I declared that I was not making up a tale, as I frequently did for his amusement and diversion, but was describing an actual occurrence, he laughed and said,

" Jolly good, old chap ! " And whenever, in later years, I again and again described the amazing event, he always adopted the same maddening attitude of,

" Jolly good effort, old chap ! Wonderful imagination you've got. You'll be a great writer some day—a novelist."

He would never take the account seriously.

Queer that *my* twin brother should be so utterly devoid of imagination, so matter-of-fact, so stolid and earth-bound.

I'm afraid he is one of those people who believe in what

they see, and are really incapable of comprehending anything occult, any such things as telepathy, clairvoyance, second-sight and similar psychic phenomena. I admit that he is extremely intuitive, sympathetic, considerate and all that ; but, to be quite frank, he is of commoner clay, dear old Markie ; and without being in the least a materialist in the sense of self-indulgence and grossness, he is not only out of touch with the occult, but has always been incapable of believing in its existence.

For example, there was another personal experience of psychic phenomena which showed how closely I was in touch with what is known as the Spirit World, and served to prove that Mark was totally unable to make any contact with it.

This experience was my repeated, indeed regularly recurrent and periodic, hearing of what I must call ghostly sounds ; for that is what they were. I never saw anything on these occasions, but I heard something, and always the same thing ; and what is also remarkable and interesting—always at the same time, somewhere about five minutes to ten in the evening.

Whenever it happened, I was suddenly aware of what is only to be described as a rushing noise ; wind whistling down the corridor outside my bedroom, as though through unglazed or open windows, accompanied by the sound of the pattering feet of dogs, most distinct and audible, and, clearest of all, the thudding of the feet of someone who ran. Not someone shod in modern boots with heavy sole and heel, but in something soft, so that the feet, as I say, thudded or thumped, rather than clattered, making a noise little louder than that of the dogs, but of a heavier and deeper note.

Then, after fleeing along the corridor, the man and dogs rushed through the room in which I slept ; and most definitely I felt the coldness of that wind which I could hear.

Thinking back, I realize that I grew up with this phenomenon, so to speak, and accepted it as something which was just as ordinary and natural as the moonlight which shone into my room ; something as usual and ordinary as the distant slamming of a door or the sound of voices from the stairs, which voices I recognized as those of my relations or of the servants.

It was only when I was about old enough to go to Prep School that I began to realize it as something abnormal, and recognized it as a psychic experience. I did not, at that time, use those terms with regard to the matter, of course ; but during my first holidays from school, on hearing it all again, I took special notice of the phenomenon and wondered as to its cause.

Of course the Wise Man will at once say,

“ Central-heating, my good ass ! Wonderful what a performance an accomplished radiator can put up, in the way of funny nocturnal hissings, gurglings, splutterings and rumblings. And some of them do actually clank—just like knights in armour. All very ghostly in the middle of the night.”

True. But in that old house of ours, there was no central heating.

“ Very well then, my dear chap,” replies the Wise Man, “ just ordinary water-pipes. They, in their more modest way, can do their bit too, when they give their mind to it. Varying temperatures ; or the turning on and off of water-taps far away in some other part of the house.”

True again. But there were no water-pipes on that storey, nor on the one below it.

"Well then, what about rats in the wainscoting?" asks the sceptic, and the reply is—Rats! For, intelligent as those rodents undoubtedly are, I never yet heard of a family of rats that staged a wild hur-roosh at perfectly regular intervals and always at five minutes to ten at night. Nor have I ever encountered a troupe of rats so gifted that some could whistle like the wind, some give a perfect rendering of the sound made by running hounds, while others could make their footfalls thud as heavily as those of a running man. No.

What about birds in the eaves? Precisely the same objections apply, apart from the fact that there were no eaves adjacent to this room.

I once talked this matter over with a prominent member of the Psychical Research Society, a man with a fine sceptically-inclined mind which could sift evidence; and he having, of course, rejected all the above solutions, suggested gas-pipes. He, personally, had known of a persistent and troublesome ghost that turned out to be water in a gas-pipe which passed under the boards of the haunted room and produced very weird sounds whenever a tap was turned on to light the gas in another room on the same floor.

But this solution also we were unable to accept, by reason of the fact that in this part of the house no gas was laid on; lamps and candles then being our sole means of illumination.

But we did glance at the chimney, metaphorically speaking; starlings, crows, direction of the wind, and so forth coming under discussion. But suddenly and simultaneously we agreed, with wry smiles, that it

would indeed be strange if any of these three agents operated with periodic regularity, and always, and only, at five minutes to ten at night.

No, there was absolutely no getting away from it.

A man and two or more big hounds rushed along the corridor and through my room, accompanied by a cold wind ; and the man was dressed in the fashion of a bygone age, with soft-soled shoes upon his feet.

As I grew older, I liked the experience less ; or let me say that I began to dislike it a little when I became more and more conscious of it as something supernatural. And it was no use my trying to get to sleep before it happened, because the noise was always sufficient to wake me—if it were the noise that did so, and not what one might call my *awareness*.

What surprises me now is the fact that I never took the trouble to work out the periodicity of the event. It is curious that I did not make a note of dates, and establish to my own satisfaction the incidence, the cycle of recurrence. But I had a pretty good idea of when it was coming ; and as I grew older, I rather took to endeavouring to avoid being in the room when it was due to occur. And although it was as real to me, as regular and actual a part of my life as going to church on Sunday or having a half-holiday on Saturday, it never existed at all for Mark.

I only told two other people about it ; and I did want him to share this experience with me, for it began to get a little too much for me to cope with alone, if you understand me. I don't know whether I told nobody else because I am naturally secretive ; whether it was because I didn't expect to be believed ; or whether it was because it was so familiar a pheno-

menon that, until I was quite a big boy, I simply paid no attention to it.

And when I did tell Mark, he treated it much as he did my account of my experience with the Ship and the dying Viking. Perhaps he did his best to believe that what I said was true. If so, it was obviously without success. For his reaction to my account of my ghostly experience was, at first,

“Quite a good effort, old chap! Throw in a groan or a shout or a bark, next time. . . .”

And when, later, I again and again begged and besought him to believe me, he adopted the attitude of,

“All right, all right! I’ll believe you. Honestly, I don’t doubt that you think you hear it. But it is pure imagination, you know.”

“Right!” said I, one night, in reply to this sort of thing. “Come and hear it for yourself, then.”

This he most willingly agreed to do; and for several nights he surreptitiously crept into my room and lay down beside me.

On the third or fourth night of our vigil it happened. The ghostly wind whistled as distinctly as ever did the real wind on a wild rough night; the two or three hounds made as much noise as ever real dogs did when scampering down a corridor; and I could have sworn that a man in soft leather shoes, or only his silken hose, was running with them. Familiar as I was with every sound of it, I once again experienced the physical sensation known as goose-flesh.

“There!” said I to Mark, lying silent beside me, “what do you make of *that*?”

“Of what?” he asked, as the noise died away.

I could have burst into tears of chagrin, disappoint-

ment and anger, for he had heard absolutely nothing at all.

I think it was on that night that I first realized that dear old Mark was not in the same mental category with me. And though I wouldn't have used a disparaging word about him, I did feel that, in comparison with myself, he was, if not something of a clod, at any rate of coarser and commoner clay. It was not his fault, of course. But facts are facts, and there it was. I realized that I had perceptive powers far finer than his, and that I dwelt on a different spiritual and psychic plane. . . . Dear old Markie ! . . .

It is amazing how unlike each other, brothers can be, even twin brothers.

Incidentally, one of the other persons whom I told was my father. He was not sceptical or surprised, but was obviously shocked and very grieved in spirit.

" My *poor* Luke ! " he cried, and took me in his arms. " But *you're* not the heir. Not *you*, Luke," he kept saying. It was as though a doctor had told him that I was stricken with some incurable and mortal illness.

He would never explain this curious attitude to my psychic experience, and he hated me to speak of it Very strange . . .

II

INTIMATIONS of immorality? Or of a bent? Both, perhaps, for one's bent may be toward immorality. I'm afraid mine was.

Certainly I showed, at a deplorable age, a literary bent which was a tendency toward, and an ability for, the telling of stories. The Young Story-Teller. Already an awful little story-teller at the age of four! An aptitude for the telling of stories . . . an intimation of immorality.

I still consider that my first story, told at the age of four, was a good one, as stories go. Where it failed, as such efforts so often do, was in the author's lack of sufficient knowledge and understanding of his material, particularly his local colour.

My mother had an ermine coat that was her pride and joy. It was a taste in fur undoubtedly shared by moths, as to her infinite regret and annoyance, my mother discovered one day, on going to take out her coat from the cupboard in which it had been hanging.

Hearing the tale of woe which she told to my father, who seemed to bear her suffering bravely; and to maids, relatives, guests, callers and all who had ears to hear and tears to shed, I gathered that The Moth had "been at it," had got into it, had eaten right through it, had made great holes in it. Wondering

at the limited and curious tastes of these enterprising yet stoic epicures, I also bore my mother's trouble bravely, and stored this new, interesting and, to me, remarkable, knowledge in the recesses of my receptive and retentive memory, whence later it issued forth to my undoing.

For, as it happened, in that very week, if not on that very day, I fell from grace. Also from a stout if rusty nail on which I had hung for a brief but most unpleasant period, by the seat of my nether garments.

Mark and I had been playing in the grounds when I had tried to climb a fence. Instead of climbing I scrambled, went to drop instead of to climb down, and found progress suddenly arrested by the above-mentioned nail which must have been both long and strong, for it supported my weight and kept me dangling ignominiously, hanging without dignity or grace, in the position nautically known as "bottom upwards."

Stoutly as Mark helped with all his strength and wit, for an age of æons I hung suspended thus in great suspense, the seat of those innominate garments presented to the gaze of the All-Seeing Eye.

Suddenly, and only just in time, I verily believe, to save my life, there was a sound of rending, and no longer was it the seat of the garments that was presented to the Unwinking Eye. I fell and (oh, how symbolically!) I fell on Mark, unhurt—though the wind was knocked from his young carcase. Homeward we made our way, I with keen consciousness of draught, if not of sin.

Fate was unkind, and at the very threshold of the hall, Nemesis overtook me.

"You are to go straight to the drawing-room, Master Luke," said Johnson, our severe, impeccable butler. "Your aunts have come to-day. You too, Master Mark," he added as an after-thought.

This was bad. Very bad.

Putting a bold front upon the matter, since I could do nothing about the back, I entered the drawing-room, marched up to the tea-table and, after behaving as I had been taught, endeavoured to fade unobtrusively away, though only too well I knew that children must be seen more than heard. "Seen" I was, alas, as I retired, and it was impossible for me to leave even these great ladies, dignified and awe-inspiring though they were, in the manner in which one quits the presence of Royalty, by retreating backward down the drawing-room to the far-distant door.

Having backed and backed until I feared that I should run into something and cause catastrophe, perhaps the overthrow of an occasional table laden with fragile bric-à-brac that was precious in my mother's sight, I turned about, and in the very act of doing so, knew that the worst had befallen me. There was a loud and sudden shriek, expressive of incredulity, pain and shock, from Aunt Matilda. For, after all, love me though she might, she was a Victorian spinster lady with a reputation as such to maintain. The other aunt, Elizabeth, cast in a sterner mould, did but call upon her Maker in his manifestation of the Gracious. "*Good Gracious!*" she cried aloud, "look at the boy's bottom."

"Come here . . . come back!" cried my mother, anguish and horror apparent in her voice. "What on earth . . . ? Why . . . how . . . what have you been doing, Luke?"

Desperate and foolish, I feigned complete ignorance as to the unmentionable.

"Luke! That great rent! Why, the whole *seat* . . ." ejaculated my mother, regaining breath.

And then and there did I enter upon my career as novelist, teller of tales, weaver of imagination's warp and woof.

"Oh, that!" said I. "Oh yes. The Moth, Mother. You know. The moth—er—got at it. A great moth came and ate it, while I was sitting reading."

That first step along the path that, often since, I trod, was innocently taken; and I am certain that, but for Mark, it would have availed me nothing toward escape, and the exercise of what faculty I have in the telling of tales and stories would then and there have been most firmly discouraged. But Mark, as usual, stepped into the—well—the breach. And even as three pairs of hands were raised in horror that one so ingenuous should utter lies so ingenious, my brother, until then silent and not so much ignored as overlooked, lifted up his voice in confirmation of my story.

"*It did!*" he said stoutly. "*I was sitting behind him and I saw it.*"

And the lightning was deflected.

To this day I smile when I think that it was Mark who was the culprit, the little liar, the wicked boy, and upon whom the bolt of punishment descended.

The incident shows how early I displayed my gifts as a novelist, and how early Mark assumed his rôle of guardian angel and my protector from blame and punishment, where he could possibly assume it all.

In fact, even from this early age, he shielded and spoilt me; and, albeit with kindest intent, began the undermining of my character.

III

IT is indeed amazing how unlike each other even twin brothers can be. I should think there never were two who differed more widely than did Mark and I.

For example, he had no literary gift or real appreciation of literature. Poetry gave him no pleasure whatsoever ; and he frankly and freely admitted that, with a few exceptions, it bored him to read it. Kipling was about his highest level ; and almost the only other poetry of which he knew anything at all were the stock recital-poems and those Shakespearean plays that are treated as lessons and enforced upon reluctant boys as tasks at school.

He found no mental joy and satisfaction in words for their own sake ; whereas to me, words are what jewels are to women.

In this respect, I was extremely fortunate in the English Master at our Prep School, a chap we called The Badger. He really loved his subject ; and a boy with an appreciative mind, an ear for words and a literary bent was an abiding joy to him. I was his favourite, whereas he rather disliked the stubborn Mark.

With the Headmaster, a very religious man, however, the reverse was the case. He recognized Mark's sterling qualities, and undoubtedly liked him very

much indeed—until he fell from grace with a truly hideous thump.

Me he disliked and distrusted from the time I misunderstood a line of his favourite hymn.

Our good Headmaster was very strong on Religion, and took a senior class every Sunday, for what he termed Divinity. A short weekly essay was an unpopular corollary.

On one unfortunate occasion we had to write all we knew about Eli. This did not take us long. Personally I found that my material for a Life of Eli was meagre, so drew upon my imagination and a pretended belief that the line

" His watch the little Levite kept "

disclosed a lapse from grace on the part of Samuel, and the loss of his gold repeater on the part of Eli. The Head was not amused nor I thenceforth approved.

Poor old Mark ! He offended the Head too. The cause of *his* fall from grace was not his fault, really. It was partly mine, and partly that of a groom who looked after our two ponies, a very bad little man who, albeit low-browed, squint-eyed, bulbous-nosed, bat-eared, loose-lipped and prognathous-jawed, rejoiced in the incredible name of Valentine Marmaduke Jermyn. Presumably he had been born on St. Valentine's Day ; probably his mamma had known and admired a gentleman rejoicing in the name of Marmaduke ; and possibly he was a degenerate descendant of some bastard offspring of a Restoration Jermyn.

Anyway, he was a man of limited vocabulary,

who referred to a misguided or misbehaving horse—or indeed, to any man, woman or child—as a fool of one unvarying hue. He used this expression (then uncommon, if now a favourite allocution of babes, sucklings and *débutantes*) impartially, as a condemnation, an approval, an appraisal, a passing reference, or merely as a term of endearment.

When in his company—and I sought his company assiduously, since it was prohibited—I heard the phrase constantly applied, whether to my father's hunter that he loved; my mother's carriage-horses that he admired; the governess-cart hack that he hated; our riding-ponies that he despised; the Vicar of whom he disapproved; the head coachman whom he feared; the village publican whom he revered; Sir Garnet Wolseley under whom he had served but whom he had never met socially; or to his own wife whom he tolerated when sober.

Since I had been strictly prohibited from unnecessary intercourse with Valentine Marmaduke Jermyn, it was really my disobedience, assisted by Mark's treacherous memory and slight mental slowness, that led to his own dreadful downfall; and it was just too bad that it was the Head himself who was the astounded and affronted witness of Mark's unintentional crime.

Now the Head was a fanatical Shakespearean, and did his utmost to give the young barbarians a play for their edification, every term, and more than a glimpse of the literary wonders and glories to which, had they the perception and intelligence, they might be the heirs. It was no fault of his if any boy went on from that admirable Prep School to his Public School under the impression that Shakespeare was a weary task, an unfortunately necessary evil, some-

thing to be "done" and happily forgotten thereafter. So, each term, we read a Shakespearean play with The Badger, the English Master, worked it up, were allotted parts, if worthy, and at the end of term, the Head would devote a solemn evening to seeing and hearing us enact it, with such costume and scenery as we could conceive and procure.

Macbeth was the play that particular term, and Mark, being one of the most outstanding and commanding personalities of the top form, had been mis-cast by The Badger to act the title-rôle.

It was really a combination of Macbeth, Valentine Marmaduke Jermyn, and my own evil suggestion that caused poor Mark's downfall.

I can see it so clearly to this day, and smile at the memory. Three boys, most weirdly garbed and bewigged, seated about a camouflaged waste-paper basket, had gabbled, or rather very creditably chanted, their incantation as the three witches:

*"Double, double toil and trouble,
Fire burn and cauldron bubble."*

Another boy, listening in the wings for his cue, tottered on as a wounded soldier from the battle-field, and Mark, with dramatic gesture, raised his hand to shade his eyes, stared, gazing upon him; and instead of declaiming Shakespeare's line,

"What bloody man is that?"

Mark cried aloud and ringingly, *"What bloody fool is that?"*

Nor was it until a shuddering gasp went up from the assembled school, and the Headmaster, rising in his wrath, turned upon Mark like a wounded lion, that the poor old chap realized that, in all his lovely

honesty and innocence, he had quoted me (who had so often quoted Jermyn) instead of Shakespeare.

I don't think the Head ever forgave him, for he never spoke really kindly to Mark again. And this so worried dear old Markie that I nearly went to the Head and told him that it was partly my fault inasmuch as, when we were privately rehearsing the play, and I was hearing Mark's part, I had always made a point of thus correcting him when he followed the true Shakespearean reading!

But I didn't do it, nor did Mark expect me to. As a matter of fact, he would not have allowed it; wouldn't for one moment have considered my interviewing the Head and explaining that I was partly to blame, for he knew how I hated that sort of thing. And besides, I'm quite sure it gave Mark tremendous pleasure to take the blame whenever he could. And who was I to deny Mark pleasure?

Looking back, I can see that I must have afforded him lots of that kind of satisfaction.

Yes, from very early days, although almost invariably I meant no harm and did no intentional wrong, I got into trouble incessantly; and incessantly Mark either got me out of it or shouldered as much of the blame as he could secure for himself. He enjoyed doing it.

There was the terrible case of the explosion in church.

Who would have imagined that so well-meaning, right-minded and innocent a child as I was, would have caused a tremendous detonation in a church, and during Divine Service?

Yet such was my fate.

Had it occurred elsewhere, the adjective " tremendous " would not be quite the *mot juste* : but in church, during Morning Prayer, and at a moment of almost perfect silence, the explosion was tremendous. It was shattering, ear-splitting.

Why should such things happen to a virtuous small boy whose fervent desire was to enjoy life, incur the dislike of no-one and the blame for nothing ; to seek peace and ensue it, and go on his way rejoicing ?

Now, a favourite toy of the period was a pistol that, while neither attempting nor professing to expel any sort of projectile, fired a percussion cap. These pistols ranged from penny cast-iron affairs, at one end of the scale, that fired a cap consisting of a tiny square of pink paper in the middle of which was a small brown spot of some detonating compound, to, at the other end, a very colourful imitation of the real pistols of the day, and firing a cap identical with that used in the cartridge of the genuine fire-arm. This cap was a thing resembling a tiny copper thimble which fitted over a steel projection or nipple that stuck up from the barrel just beneath the hammer.

To my boundless joy and utter undoing, my adored mother, who spoilt me shamelessly and most delightfully, gave me one of these magnificent dummy pistols from the very apex of the scale, and a box of percussion caps. The thing was in no wise dangerous, for though it looked exactly like a Wild West " gun," the nipple was not bored, and in any case, save for an inch of the muzzle, the iron barrel was solid all through. This naturally made it a fine heavy weapon, as within a week of possessing it, I was to realize only too well.

What a pity it is that adults cannot remember, or

rather recapture, the ineffable joy that children feel on receiving some coveted object ; a thing so insignificant to the grown-up, so colossal to the child. We should be more concerned to provide that joy more often if we more often tried to re-live our own childhood.

In this instance, I honestly and truly believe that I would have given a finger, if not a hand, a pint of blood, and almost anything that I possessed in the world, rather than have lost that pistol.

I was literally never parted from it ; for it went to bed with me, and lay beneath my pillow, its butt ready to the grasp of my hand. And at the slightest sound, perhaps of someone shutting a door down below, I would stealthily draw the pistol from beneath the pillow, cock it, and peer into the gloom.

What was it ? A questing leopard ; a great python ; a stealthy dacoit ; a Red Indian ; or a mere burglar, masked and horrific ?

Then with infinite care, the hammer would be lowered on to the percussion cap and the pistol replaced, to be withdrawn as I woke at dawn—the hopeless dawn that found me sitting beneath a tree which, with my broken leg, I could not climb, my back against the trunk, watching and waiting while the circle of wolves closed in, and their red mouths and evil glinting eyes drew nearer and nearer . . .

And when those holidays ended and Mark and I had to return to school, my pistol went with me, smuggled, to my great discomfort, inside my exiguous trousers: and for less than a week, it was the admiration of all beholders, among whom masters were not included, as they were given no opportunity of admiring it. High as I had hitherto stood in the estimation of the other fellows, my standing in the school improved

yet further. For those few days I was almost as happy at school as I had been at home. When in class and unable to handle, I might say to fondle, my pistol, I thought of it the more.

Of course, it went abroad with me upon our walks, and in a rash and foolish moment, I, impulsive ever, decided that there was no reason why it should not go with me to Church, this being the early days before our School Chapel was built.

It went—in my overcoat pocket, into which it fitted but ill.

The temperature of the church that morning was unexpectedly high, and grew steadily higher, whether by reason of excessive zeal on the part of him who stoked the furnace in the crypt, or because of the coming out of the sun and the waxing of its heat. At any rate, as we settled down before the sermon, and a whisper from the master in charge of us encouraged such as so desired, to remove their overcoats. Many of us preferred to do so, I among them.

Folding my coat once, I put it over the back of my chair, seated myself and, a minute later, did, in common with every other member of that large congregation, suddenly leap high at the sound of a crashing, shattering and rending explosion!

My heavy pistol had fallen from my overcoat pocket, and the first part of it that struck the stone floor must have been the back of the hammer, for never before or afterwards did that pistol go off with anything like so loud a report. It was terrific, ear-splitting, and of course, the sound was infinitely greater inside the closed and echoing church where, through the long-drawn aisle and fretted vault, there pealed that fearful noise.

The whole school was paraded, before lunch, in the Hall. . . .

I really don't think that the Head could, for one moment, have supposed that so outrageous and foul a deed was intentional. But he behaved exactly as though it had been; and as though both he and Mark knew it to have been not only intentional but pre-meditated. Had a boy risen from his seat, pointed a pistol at him, or at the very preacher in the pulpit, and fired it off, he could hardly have taken a more serious view of the matter. But he kept on what was, of course, absolutely safe ground by defining the crime as "being in possession of a pistol and of taking it, loaded, to Church"—which undoubtedly *Mark* had done.

Or so he promptly said!

Although words would have failed me to tell the Head so, I should as soon have contemplated taking a police-whistle to Church and blowing it with all my might in the middle of a sermon, as taking my pistol to Church, had I for one second envisaged the possibility of so ghastly a contretemps. I explained this fully, afterwards, to Mark—as I was spared an interview with the Head—and all that he could reply was, "Well . . . Shut up . . . And don't take a pistol to Church again, or a police-whistle either."

I stoutly objected to Mark's interference, and wanted to go to the Head and confess that the pistol was mine; but, as Mark at once pointed out to me, he would cop it most frightfully for having told a thumping lie in saying that the pistol was his.

Poor old Markie! . . .

Had he anything to say before the passing of sentence, asked the Head?

Mark had nothing to say, especially as the offence of which he was accused, and to which he pleaded guilty, was the taking of the pistol to Church. Whether the explosion were an accident or not wasn't the question. But there could be no question as to the truth of the indictment as the Head framed it. A loaded pistol had been taken to Church, and Mark had confessed to having taken it—before I could get to my feet and utter a word.

So the Headmaster, as Jury, found Mark guilty; and the Headmaster, as Judge, sentenced him to the cat, to a term of imprisonment with hard labour, and to the confiscation of his property; and the Headmaster, as Lord High Executioner, carried out the sentence.

The cat had more than nine tails, being a birch—and it was a bad business. I think I can honestly plead that it hurt me more than it did Mark . . . No? . . . Perhaps not! . . . Imprisonment in an empty class-room, while other boys played football, and to work at the hard labour of writing an imposition was worse, and I must in decency visit him in gaol and spend some time with him.

But in point of fact, the worse of all fell on me, as was only just, for the pistol was confiscated. This was, I think, the greatest of the sorrows up to that time suffered by me, a child almost unacquainted with grief.

It was quite a bad week. It must have been, to remain thus clearly in my memory which has had so many other and so much worse sufferings to drive it out or obliterate it.

But there were compensations. Out of evil cometh good, almost inevitably.

And in this darkness of suffering, childish, but as real in its degree as was the agony of Samson, there shone a light, that light of human kindness that is the true *lux mundi*, and shines farther than does any other light, and gives far greater warmth.

Mark, as so often before and since, was its source, for he suffered with me and for me in my mourning and my loss, and was my comforter. Nay more, for whether aware or not of the excellent proverb which states that Pity without Relief is like mustard without beef, he gave me concrete pledges of his sympathy—his own little pistol and caps, bought by himself with his own money.

Compared with my own, my loved, my lost, this pistol was but a poor thing, albeit double-barrelled. Cast-iron in all its works and parts, it resembled a real pistol only in shape, and that distantly. Beside mine, it was without form and void, and it fired mere, miserable pink paper caps. But poor old Mark loved it, and this giving was the token and the measure of his great goodness of heart. I could not accept it because, in the first place—and I hope that this feeling really took the first place—it was a poor thing but his own, almost as dear to Mark as my wonderful pistol was to me; and in the second place, I could not accept it because really it was so very inferior a substitute.

But for a day or two I kept it. In Mark's presence I used and praised it, and going for a walk with the rest of the school on a Sunday afternoon, I carried it in my overcoat pocket, and used it when we reached the Common, our Sunday destination, in repelling an attack of spear-brandishing savages upon our stockade.

An excellent game this, always popular, and of my

very own invention. About a magnificent old tree the inappropriate authorities had erected, for its protection, a particularly futile and ineffectual ring of chestnut-wood stakes, joined by a single strand of wire. Inside this, those who possessed pistols and caps, formed a thin pink line of heroes, few but staunch, and were promptly and grievously and overwhelmingly attacked by lesser breeds without the firearms.

If a foeman rushed at you with brandished spear, which might be a raspberry-cane, a light walking-stick or anything else of that nature, and could prod you in the chest ere you fired your pistol, you were, in honour bound to collapse upon the bloodless trodden earth, writhe, groan and die.

If, on the other hand, you fired your pistol as he rushed at you, that histrionic duty was his. Inasmuch as our caps rarely missed fire, the garrison usually won and, ere the fight ended, the enemy dead were thickly piled about the stockade.

I loved this game and so did Mark.

And an interesting point about this pistol incident is the fact that it was I, and not Mark, who was oppressed by a sense of injustice. Why should I lose my pistol, which was the thing that I cherished beyond all else that I possessed? I remember that the text of the sermon in Church on the following Sunday was that deeply intriguing and somewhat sinister question,

"Were they sinners above all men upon whom fell the tower in Siloam?"

Was I a sinner above all boys, that this blow should have fallen upon me; that my pistol should have been taken from me?

It struck me, a schoolboy in my earliest teens, even

then, as unsatisfactory that towers and blows should fall upon some and not upon others, upon the just and the unjust alike. Were they sinners? And if not, why were they the chosen victims of this catastrophic mischance? Or were they chosen victims? Because, if so, it was not a mischance. And if it were not a mischance it was intentional, and if Christ Himself had to ask the question "*Were they sinners beyond other men*" there would appear to have been doubt in His own mind on the subject.

The question remains in the air, looming portentous and vitally important. Are we victims of accident and chance? Are we playthings of a mocking Fate, or the cherished children of God, rewarded and punished fairly and exactly, according to our deeds and misdeeds?

Were they sinners beyond other men? A hard saying, and, what is worse, a fundamental question asked by God Himself—and left unanswered.

Was I a sinner beyond other boys? Of course I was not.

I think it was while pondering the text of this sermon that, of such Faith, Hope and Charity as I possessed, Hope superseded Faith and took the leading place.

By some, it may scarcely be believed that so young a child would be interested, nay, arrested, by a question of this nature.

The fact remains. I was.

And I accepted the blows of Fate and of my Headmaster as in the nature of things, inevitable, ineluctable, falling upon the good man and upon the wicked.

Before I was much older I decided that this, though a dreadful thing, was to be recognized and dealt with wisely; that since one could not be justified of one's

Faith, and could only cling to Hope, one must also help oneself ; one must keep one's eye upon all Towers of Siloam, watching lest they totter ; and when they did so, stand from under. If the eighteen upon whom the Tower fell were not sinners above all men, they were, at any rate, supine and fatalistic beyond such men as knew enough to avoid insecure Towers, and to go while the going was good. Without putting my thought into words, I did then and there resolve to be a nineteenth, so to speak, where Towers of Siloam were concerned. And inasmuch as the rain, on good authority, falleth upon the just and the unjust, I resolved to preserve at least enough sense to come in out of the rain.

Yes, that explosive Sunday together with the next, and its disturbing sermon (so poignantly appropriate to me, who had just lost my pistol), marked, I believe, a turning-point in my life, and had a great effect upon my character.

Faith ? What about faith in Life's Towers of Siloam ?

Hope ? Hope they won't fall on you.

Charity ? In this case, charity was not called upon to function. Toward the Head there was no need to exercise forgiveness as well as the compulsory forbearance, since one realized that he was but an instrument ; a noble, if necessary, instrument in the hand of that same capricious Fate that, either behind God's back or with God's knowledge and consent, allowed the Tower to fall upon the just and unjust men of Siloam, and again, this blow to fall upon me—in spite of Mark's altruism.

Yes, I decided, walking home from Church, beside Mark, if Heaven helps anybody it is those who help themselves.

Ever since then I have helped myself to the best of my ability, and gratefully accepted any outside help, whether from God or Mark.

And I did so when we went on from Prep School to Public School and again when from Public School we went on to Oxford.

Mark and I were inseparable, I with my quicker intelligence usually the leader, Mark with his unfailing loyalty the follower, and, with his solid stolid love and devotion, only too often the scapegoat.

All very nice, but all very bad for me, of course, and a continuation of the spoiling that I got from my mother, and to a slightly greater extent, from my father, and after my mother's death, from Athene if not from Rosanne. As a matter of fact, it had always been more or less the same from everybody, with the exception of the hard-faced hag, my Aunt Elizabeth, the Headmaster of my Prep School, Rosanne perhaps, and one or two other rare people.

Mother always let me have my way, and indeed saw that I had it. I must never be thwarted, and whatever I said or did was right, when it wasn't marvellous. And on those occasions when things were not right, Mark must have been at the bottom of whatever was wrong.

Poor old Mark ! For him life was one damned stile after another—and I the lame dog he helped over them all . . .

§ 2

And speaking of help, I must speak of Rosanne. For her other name was helpfulness. She was a marvel ;

and I really think she was never so happy as when joining in our plots and plans and multifarious activities ; her assistance and support being the more welcome in that she was almost as good as a boy. She was a very attractive kid, and not the less intriguing because she could be an aggravating little bitch when she felt like it.

To be quite fair, I must admit that this was only when she was made to feel like it ; and as a rule, it was I who was the cause of her feeling that way. We squabbled a lot, partly because I loved to tease her, and partly because she always took Mark's side when he and I differed. Almost from the time of her coming to Courtesy Court, we regarded her as a sister and, paradoxically, treated her as a brother.

She was like a boy in her code of honour, and was quite unfeminine in her sense of fairness, in her straight, lucid, and logical mind ; in many of her interests ; in her preference for out-door things ; and particularly in her preferring our company to that of girls.

Nevertheless, I liked Giulia, of whom we saw nearly as much, even better than Rosanne, for she was more appreciative, more understanding, more of an artist.

To be frank and self-critical, it is possible that the chief reason for my great affection for Giulia was the fact that she was my perfect audience.

It was to Giulia I turned for approbation ; it was to Rosanne I went for help.

From Giulia I was certain of getting what I wanted—neat and in full measure. From Rosanne I was equally certain of getting what I wanted—but not without criticism. If Giulia was honey, what was Rosanne ? Carbolic soap ? Yes, not a bad simile ; helpful, cleansing, purifying, very good for you. Per-

haps Giulia was something of a luxury and Rosanne, at times, a good deal of a necessity.

Nevertheless, there were times when I hated Rosanne ; and if Giulia were occasionally cloying, she was never detestable.

But always, even when I told her that, in bringing her to Courtesy Court my father had put a critic on my hearth and domesticated my Recording Angel, I admitted that he had done a wonderful thing for us all when, having married Athene, he brought her and Rosanne home.

I realized, even then, that Athene's money made a marvellous difference to Courtesy Court, if it did not actually save it ; and though only a boy between Prep School and Public School, I very warmly welcomed the fact and appreciated Rosanne. Within limits. Out of doors she was splendid, delighted to fag for us, to take second place as a member of the inferior sex, to play minor rôles and to do as she was told.

Indoors it wasn't so good, for she held her own—and something that hitherto had been mine.

The extraordinary thing about Rosanne was that she was so sterling, so clean, simple, straight and honest, in view of what her mother was and what her upbringing had been.

It is really very difficult to say anything about Athene. *De mortuis nil nisi bonum* is bunk ; but there are things one doesn't want to say about persons who have been kind, even when they have been inordinately so. For the trouble with Athene was that she was a damned sight too kind. To me, at any rate. Especially when I came home, very grown up and all that, at the end of my first year at Oxford. It was partly on that account that I pushed off to Paris. What

amazing and unexpected consequences spring from small causes—if one is to call that a small cause.

But for Athene's utterly uncontrolled, indiscriminate, and promiscuous what shall I say—self-expression in love—I should not be sitting here in my self-made paper prison.

In a way, it was a terrible thing that she did; unthinkable; an incident and theme worthy of a Greek tragedy and comparable with the *Œdipus* situation. And yet at the same time—paradox again—Athene was a good woman, to the extent that she was of loving-kindness, good-will and generosity all compact. There never lived a more liberal soul. The trouble was that she was too liberal.

She was a dear kind friend to her friends, though over-kind to her men friends. She was an excellent wife to my father, who only wanted to be left alone in his selfish peace while somebody ran his house, paid his bills, adorned his table, entertained his guests, looked after his sons, and relieved him of what he regarded as the carking cares and crushing burdens of widowerhood in a big house.

She was a good mother, to the extent that she gave Rosanne everything except a good example, and grudged her nothing but her time and the care, guardianship, teaching and training that only a mother can give.

She was an excellent mistress (here the fault lies with the English language and not with me, if my meaning is obscure) for the servants gave her a first-class character, and never contemplated dismissing her from her position as their employer. Even Johnson, who had really loved my mother, was quickly won

over, forgave her for being a foreigner and an incomer, and approved her generous management of the house.

She was an admirable hostess, and soon became very popular in the County.

In short, there was nothing whatsoever wrong with Athene except that she was an utterly amoral unprincipled wicked woman.

Amazing that Rosanne should have been not only her daughter but the product of her upbringing!

Well—I will only say that Athene spoilt me and not that she might have ruined my character altogether had I not escaped her.

She spoilt me, and I loved it and loved her sympathy with my temperament, and her encouragement of my gifts. She understood me better than Mark or Rosanne did, and it is to those who understand us that we feel the highest gratitude. She really loved my poems and stories, would listen to me by the hour—and ask for more. Dear Athene—my evil genius . . .

IV

NO, in my rôle of poet and juvenile novelist, or shall I say story-teller, it was not from my twin-brother nor from Rosanne that I got understanding, sympathy and encouragement, any more than in my manifestations as a clairvoyant and psychic. It was from Athene and also from Giulia Brent-Grayleigh, a child who, if she did not exactly grow up with us, grew up very near us. Very near to me, certainly. How far this was by reason of the fact that she was so appreciative an audience, so much in sympathy, and of such similar tastes and disposition, I do not know. No one enjoyed my stories more than she did.

Giulia, as well as believing in my psychic experiences, was always most encouraging to my literary efforts, professing to find, and I think really finding, greater pleasure in the stories that I told and afterwards wrote, than in any that she found in the books and magazines that she read.

Not so Rosanne. She was critical, and instead of accepting the story as a story, the fancies as facts, and the poetic licence of the weaver of tales as permissible, she must put an unerring finger on improbabilities, discrepancies and inconsistencies. Moreover, if Giulia were over-endowed with imaginative power, Rosanne was a little lacking in imagination, and much too literal. Not only was she an unsparing critic,

but she made Mark critical, Mark who until her coming had held the admirable creed that whatever Luke did was perfect, whatever Luke said was right, and that whatever Luke produced was above criticism. (In point of fact it usually was above Mark's.)

Right from the days of my Moth story, I had been noted as a weaver of spells and a spinner of tales, a fact that accounted for some of my great popularity among our friends at home, and in our circle at School. I was in great demand in the dormitories, both at Prep and Public Schools.

To Giulia and to Mark, before Rosanne's coming, my stories were joys undiluted, shining examples of perfect entertainment which no breath of criticism must ever dim.

Rosanne changed all that.

Particularly I remember my wonderful story of the Wolves and the Three Children in the sleigh. We all knew the story of the Faithful Russian Servant who saved his master's life by throwing himself to the Wolves, and had read it *ad nauseam*: but I produced a brighter and a better story in which Lukeovitch, accompanied by Markovitch and Rosannski, drove a *troika* sleigh across the boundless Steppes, pursued by a tireless pack of Abominable Wolves. Nearer and nearer they came. Slower and slower went the weary horses. The children's ammunition was exhausted. Everything that could be thrown out for the distraction and hindering of the wolves had been thrown.

Must they all die? Should Lukeovitch sacrifice himself for them, and leap to a dreadful death?

No, he was the only one of the three who could drive and control the maddened horses.

Should he sacrifice one of these? He must. With

swift strokes of his hunting-knife the boy severed the traces ; and the horse, instead of galloping gaily off, directly it was released from the burden of the sledge, unaccountably fell behind and was pulled down by the wolves, its piercing screams curdling the blood of Lukeovitch, Markovitch and Rosannski who had loved the poor faithful animal.

The delaying device gave but a temporary respite. A second horse was sacrificed. Again the relief was but brief ; and now they had but the one horse to take them for the hundred versts that lay between them and home.

Now the wolves had drawn level, were beginning to forge ahead, and soon the leaders of the pack would spring upon the remaining horse.

Suddenly Lukeovitch, to the horror of his companions, again drew his hunting-knife, severed the remaining traces and released the third horse.

“ You’ve killed us ! ” cried Markovitch.

“ Leap out ! ” cried Lukeovitch as the sleigh slowed down ; and, when they did so, putting forth all his tremendous strength, Lukeovitch, with a superhuman effort tipped the sleigh up on one side, so that it stood erect.

“ Quick ! Under ! ” he shouted, as he began to lower it to the ground, and the other two, realizing what he was doing, flung themselves down in the snow, as Lukeovitch, crouching beneath the sleigh, lowered it over their three prostrate bodies.

They were saved. . . .

There was breathless silence, as I finished my tale.

“ Oh no, they weren’t,” said Rosanne suddenly.
“ They were suffocated, and died miserably. Just as

well, perhaps, for they'd only have been frozen to death. Or if they had huddled together and kept warm, they'd have starved," she said. "Sad."

Little bitch. How I hated her.

I remember, too, my almost uncontrollable anger when she brought me down from the heights of the creator's joy, after my story of the noble young Trumpeter who saved his Officer's life at the cost of his own, in the massacre of the Khyber Pass.

His name was Lucas and he was the son of the grey-haired coachman who had so long served Sir Markham's family.

The fugitives from Kabul were pouring through the Khyber Pass; the Battery of which Sir Markham Tuyler's son was Captain, suddenly came under heavy fire from the hordes of Afghan sharp-shooters concealed along the rocky sides of the gorge; the horses plunged in wild confusion and fell, dead or wounded, blocking the passage of the guns. Gunners and bombardiers fell from their seats on the limbers; men ran hither and thither, some trying to escape, some trying to get at the enemy, others trying to man-handle the guns.

On to a boulder sprang Captain Sir Markham Tuyler and shouted clear directions. Upon him the Afghans, who were picking off the officers with fiendish cunning, turned their fire, and he fell wounded. Soon they would swoop down, hacking and stabbing, slaying and slaughtering, but specially reserving the officers for hideous tortures by the women-folk.

Lucas, his Trumpeter, sprang to his side.

What could Trumpeter Lucas do? He gazed into the face of his beloved officer, as he held his water-bottle to his pale lips.

"Leave me, leave me," murmured Captain Sir Markham. "Save yourself."

Instead of obeying him, Lucas sprang to his feet, hastily stripped off his uniform and laid it on the ground. Then, with unexpected gentleness, he unbuttoned the handsome, heavily braided tunic of his wounded officer.

With almost womanly care he undressed him and re-dressed him in his own plain uniform of a private soldier. Having done so, he hastily donned the officer's kit, his gold-braided tunic with its furred dolman and his tall, plumed busby.

Scarcely had he finished, when, with a wild yell, the hordes of tribesmen sprang to their feet and rushed down the gully brandishing their tulwars, and shouting "Kill! Kill!"

"Keep the officers alive!" roared their leader. And desperately as he fought with his master's sword, Lucas was overborne, struck down, seized and carried off. Of his fate let us not even think.

When the relief party from Jellalabad, led by Dr. Brydon, reached the pass, Captain Sir Markham Tuyler was still alive. He recovered—but he never smiled again.

A long silence.

It was broken by Rosanne.

"Onions!" she said. "Never smiled? I should have thought he'd have laughed all day. What did the fool Trumpeter want to put his officer's uniform on at all for? Couldn't he have scrambled—bunked in his little short shirt?"

I could have wrung her neck, a fact which I did not withhold from her; and a deed to which Giulia would have raised no objection.

§ 2

As well as enjoying my stories and unreservedly praising them, no one understood, or more fully believed in, my occult experiences than did Giulia.

We shared one together. And to be quite frank and honest, as I desire to be, we shared on that occasion more than a psychic experience; for psychic in inception, it proceeded, young and passionate as we both were, through spiritual, emotional and physical phases to a passionate conclusion.

I cannot remember when I first knew Giulia Brent-Grayleigh. We probably exchanged bubbling salutations from our respective perambulators, but I have known her as long as I have known anybody, and, save for Mark and Rosanne, as well as I have ever known anybody. Better perhaps. It was truer of her and me than it was of Mark and me, that we were, even as kids, two minds with but a single thought, so extraordinarily well did we get on together, so delighted was she to do anything that I was doing, and so content, indeed happy, merely to be in my company. She was the only person except Mark, whom I ever told of my Viking-ship experience. This she fully accepted and understood, as she did that of the man and hounds who rush down the corridor and through my bedroom.

There was something un-English about Giulia, which is not remarkable in view of the fact that her mother was an Italian lady *née* Contessa della Mirandola. Giulia was all that is the opposite of stolid, stupid, slow-witted, conventional; nothing of the English bread-and-butter Miss about her at all.

The shared experience to which I refer happened

on the occasion of her birthday celebrations, her eighteenth, I fancy. Being an only daughter, her parents made a tremendous fuss of her, and every year there were great doings at Grayleigh House on this anniversary, the place being filled with young people. On this occasion, there was the usual gay house-party and dance in the evening ; and although we lived so near, Mark and I had to join the house-party, for Giulia wouldn't hear of our merely coming over for the Birthday Ball.

Grayleigh House is a pre-Elizabethan building, one wing of which is quite old, the remains of a house rather rich in historical associations. General Sir Henry and Lady Brent-Grayleigh did things very well, and it was reluctantly, though sleepily, that the party broke up, and those who were staying in the house dispersed to their respective rooms. Mark and I were in the old wing of which the upstairs floor consisted of a row of bedrooms so numerous and small as to suggest that they probably had been at one time a monks' dormitory.

This wing had character and atmosphere, both of which appealed to me enormously. I could feel that I had lived and slept here hundreds of years ago, or that if I had not done so, an ancestor of mine had, which in point of fact was quite probable.

Having undressed, I blew out the candles on the ancient stone overmantel, yawned my way to bed, blew out the remaining candle on the little table beside me, and fell asleep almost as my head touched the pillow.

I was awakened by someone gently shaking me.

"*Sh-h-h,*" whispered Giulia, who was standing over me and dropping candle-wax on to my bed.

"What's up, Giu?" I whispered.

"The ghost. . . . I'm frightened."

This woke me up quite effectively. I sat up, rubbed my eyes and pulled myself together. Giulia wasn't a liar (at least, she didn't tell me lies) and I knew all about the Grayleigh House ghost.

"Seen it?" I asked.

"No. Same thing again. This is the third time I have heard it. . . . I had gone to sleep and was awakened by a noise in the room."

"What sort of noise?"

"Somebody crying. A woman, I should think, sobbing as though her heart would break."

In view of my own experiences of hearing inexplicable sounds, I forbore to suggest radiators, water-pipes, gas-pipes, chimneys, birds, crows and such origins, because they did not apply to this wing of Grayleigh House any more than they did to my room at home.

"What did you do?"

"Although I've heard it before, I was too petrified to do anything, at first. She just went on sobbing. It was absolutely clear and realistic. Then I was certain there was somebody alive and real in the room. One of the girls upset about something."

"Why didn't you strike a match?"

"Just what I did do, because she had a catch in her breath, just like Beatrice Miller has when she cries, and I was reassured. I felt quite angry with her, coming and frightening me like that, and I said, '*Oh, shut up, Beatrice!*' and felt for the matches. And then, '*Is that you, Beechy?*' I said as I struck a match, and—there was nobody there. I managed to light the candle, and the room was quite empty."

"Did the crying stop?" I asked.

"It faded away as though, not liking the light, she had gone out of the room."

"Here, put that candle down. . . . How your hand is shaking. . . . You'll get your death of cold. . . . Come in here." And as Giulia sat down beside me, I raised the warm bed-clothes and put them about her shoulders.

Turning gratefully, she freed one arm and pulled the eiderdown about us both. Putting my arms round her, I hugged her to me until her shivering stopped.

"Oh, Luke," she whispered. "I . . . I'm so frightened," and raised her arms about my neck.

"You were, you mean, silly," I said, and gave her a brotherly hug and kiss.

The hug was returned with interest. The kisses grew less brotherly.

We sat for I know not how long. . . .

"Darling, *darling* Luke," murmured Giulia between kisses. In fact, she only took her lips from mine to whisper endearments, until suddenly,

"My feet are cold," she said, making me feel thoughtless and inconsiderate, a selfish brute indeed, for mine were warm enough.

I raised the bed-clothes and Giulia crept into bed with me.

Next day, as Giulia and I sat, after lunch, ensconced in a deep arm-chair in a corner of the library, where for a while we should be undisturbed, I told her that I wanted to spend a night in her bedroom, to see whether I too might experience a psychic manifestation. Inasmuch as Mark completely failed to hear my ghostly hounds, I had a theory that, just as beauty is in the eye of the beholder, so ghostly experience is in

the capacity of the observer. In other words, one man can see a ghost, while another cannot; just as one ear can hear and appreciate the beauties of a Chopin Prelude or a Bach Fugue where another ear cannot. Giulia was psychic and so was I. Giulia had heard, but not seen, the ghost. Perhaps I could hear it, and possibly I could see it too.

Promptly she flung her arms about my neck and pressed her soft moist lips against mine.

"Darling, darling Luke," she whispered; and it was not until I had repeated the statement, that she grasped that what I wanted to see and hear was a discarnate ghost and not a fleshly Giulia. I, with some difficulty, forbore to point out that Giulia I could see as often as I liked, possibly oftener, whereas occasions for encountering a disembodied lady of bygone years, a wraith from beyond the centuries, a relic of old unhappy far-off things, were all too rare.

Did I really and truly want to see, and perhaps hear, a ghost? asked Giulia, in a little hurt withdrawn voice, as she arose from my lap.

Yes, most definitely I did; and if she had been speaking the truth, and the ghost had manifested in that room last night, there was at least a chance that it might repeat the visitation to-night. There was a still greater chance that it wasn't so much a case of the ghost visiting the room and making its presence known to the occupant, as of a person of receptive and perceptive psychic powers visiting the room and being aware of the ghost that always inhabited it.

Giulia pondered for a moment, gnawing her little finger-nail.

"All right," she said, "we'll go to bed as usual,

after the doings to-night, and change rooms when everything is quiet."

Some time after two o'clock that night, Giulia crept into my room in nightdress and wrapper, and I, pulling on my dressing-gown, hurried off—to Giulia's ill-concealed chagrin.

I lay down in her warm bed and remained awake for I know not how long. I probably fell asleep, for I was suddenly aroused, if not awakened, by Giulia acting the goat in the darkness of the room.

I might mention, by the way, that this was not her own bedroom. It may have been due to the upheaval caused by the big influx of guests for the birthday celebrations, that she had turned out of her own. It may, on the other hand, have been by reason of the fact that the room next to the one allotted to me was vacant and available. Anyway, it was a room very rarely used, and carefully not alluded to as the haunted chamber.

I was a little bit annoyed that she should have come and played the fool when I was really engaged in a little private and practical psychical research on my own account, and it was with somewhat bad grace that I observed, as I felt for the matches,

"Oh, *very* funny! Very humorous! Great joke, Giulia. I feel a laugh coming on."

Sulkily striking a match and lighting the candle, I saw that the room was empty. And I heard the sound of a deep sob and a catch in the breath, as some invisible person turned, went toward the door, apparently through it and down the corridor, the sounds of suppressed sobbing dying away as he or she did so.

I found that I was trembling, but my emotion was

not fear or horror so much as excitement. I experienced the same phenomenon later when under heavy fire, and nothing was further from my thoughts than fear and terror.

What an extraordinary thing that twice I should have so distinctly heard what were, without the shadow of a doubt, ghostly sounds, and yet on neither occasion did I see the ghost associated with them.

Having slowly returned to earth and to my normal calm, I got out of Giulia's bed and went back to my room. For the sake of added certainty and making absolute assurance doubly sure, I accused her of having played the fool and the ghost, an accusation which she warmly denied. And, as I have said, Giulia never lied to me.

I apologized, and my apology was more than warmly received. It was not till daylight that Giulia could contemplate returning to the haunted room.

§ 3

I love to get the *mot juste* and the apt simile. I think I have both if I say that Giulia was my nightingale and Rosanne my lovely mocking-bird. Giulia so sweet, so tuneful, so alluring to the poetic soul; Rosanne so piquant, so stimulating, so aggravating.

Giulia was like a lovely songster, and I, for one, but rarely had enough of her sweet music.

Rosanne's music might be charming, delightful, soothing even, for a bird of so many notes must inevitably be attractive; at times with the attraction of sheer delightfulness, at others with that of the unexpected. Rosanne was always *en surprise*, at once sweet and savoury; sweet, sharp and vinegary; sweet,

peppery and burning, but never cloying, uninteresting or dull. Natheless, it is not always pleasing to the palate to encounter cayenne where you expected jam ; to find an onion in your apple-dumpling, chillies or garlic in your cream-bun. Nor should an apparent glass of sherry prove to be a prairie-oyster or a dose of quinine.

And yet here is the strange thing. It was Rosanne and not Giulia whom I wanted to please. Giulia I pleased inevitably, invariably. Rosanne I did not. For her to be pleased, one had to please her. Giulia was always pleased with *me*, Luke Rivers Tuyler. Rosanne was not by any means always pleased with me. I could charm her, of course, and I did charm her, but I had to do it. Perhaps that was part of her tremendous attraction—and repulsion.

I loved Giulia for loving me. Far more I loved to please Rosanne ; and I hated her for not loving me for myself ; for making me please her ; and for making me want to please her.

As I have said before, I do desire to be honest with myself, and I am going to get this straight in my own mind, for it is as puzzling and as interesting as it is important.

I have said that I had to please her, and that *has* a double meaning, each of which is true.

When I say that I had to please her, I mean that to please her I had to make an effort. I had to be the Luke that she wanted me to be. I had both to be and to do, to be her ideal Luke and to do the things that her ideal Luke naturally would do.

Again, when I say that I had to please her, I mean that I was under an irresistible compulsion to do so. I simply *had* to please her or be miserable. When I

was not pleasing her, I was wretched, piqued and annoyed. I was unhappy, and I hated her for making me unhappy. And when she made me unhappy, as she so often did, I went to Giulia for comfort, and Giulia never failed me.

I don't thereby imply that Rosanne ever failed me in the sense of letting me down. She was incapable of that sort of thing. But she did most undeniably and quite frequently fail to approve, applaud, admire. Perhaps I am a little harsh on myself when I use the word admire, and seem to complain that Rosanne was not filled with uncritical admiration of everything I did. Perhaps "accept" would be a better word.

Giulia accepted whatever I did as admirable; and she always approved and applauded, whereas Rosanne was much more critical.

Or let me say, rather, that Giulia was never critical and Rosanne always was.

I don't mean that she was always disapproving. She could give praise most generously where she thought it was due, but she was far too fond of her own opinion, and she presumed to sit in judgment when not qualified to do so.

Giulia, for example, loved my poetry, and enjoyed nothing more than hearing me read it to her, especially when she and her beauty were its subject.

Rosanne, on the other hand, would, in the same breath, frankly confess that she knew nothing about poetry, and that she considered mine to be tripe; that *vers libre* was not poetry at all, and that any fool could write it. Nevertheless, she was most generously and stoutly appreciative of my effort to please her when I wrote a poem *To Rosanne on the occasion of her Eighteenth Birthday*.

There wasn't a word of criticism of that poem and I knew, with the utmost certainty, that this was not because it was dedicated to Rosanne, but because she realized that I had given thought and effort to pleasing her. So warmly appreciative and grateful was she that I really felt a slight sense of guilt in the knowledge that this poem had been written for Giulia's natal anniversary. But Rosanne is a very much easier word for which to find rhymes. In fact, I had, in this very poem, been despairingly driven to the ghastly depths of making "peculiar" and "truly your" rhyme with Giulia!

Having perpetuated this awful poem and realized that Giulia would simply love it, I was almost ill upon the paper—and turned to rhymes for Rosanne. . . .

But on ordinary occasions, though she gave praise where praise was due, she obviously preferred to criticize where criticism was possible. It was good criticism—and damned impudence, too, very often.

I remember particularly, doing a water-colour of the rose-garden with the house in the background. When it was finished, it proved to be one of my successes, and I was very pleased with it. So much so, that I decided to have it framed in narrow gilt and give it to Rosanne for her sitting-room. She accepted it gratefully, thanked me very warmly, and admired it generously. When I said,

"Well, little Miss Clever, any complaints? Any fault to find, this time?" she said,

"Well, looking a gift horse in the mouth is a lousy trick, but since you ask—I am quite sure that trees silhouetted between you and the sky-line couldn't be as green as that. This would be a lovely green if the

sunlight were on them, but with the light behind them, they'd be almost black."

"Thank you, Madam Corot," I said, taking the picture from her and putting my heel on the glass with all my weight.

Had I given the picture to Giulia, she would have "simply loved" it, praised it without stint; and had I pretended to ask for criticism, would very rightly have observed that I knew a thousand times more about painting than she did, and that she would not dream of attempting to find any fault. And the incident would have provided nothing but mutual delight, and would have ended in my being thoroughly pleased with myself and with Giulia.

I don't want to give the impression that Rosanne and I were constantly quarrelling, or that she was difficult to live with. Nothing could be further from the truth. She was delightful to live with, and we bickered quite cheerfully and amicably, for she was an extremely difficult person with whom really to quarrel, or indeed to argue. As she so often remarked during our married life,

"Discussion I enjoy; argument I loathe; and quarrelling I abhor. In fact, I utterly refuse to do it."

No, as a girl she was a delightful person, one of those rare women who have not only beauty, but brains and character, all of the very first class.

But among her gifts of golden silence, of silver speech, of sparkling wit, of perfect sincerity, of generosity, sympathy and kindness, she had a rare gift of mockery and provocation. She could be most annoying and irritating, to me at any rate, the damned darling.

As a boy, I always looked forward to seeing her at

the end of term, and at the end of hols I was generally jolly glad to see the last of her, and openly thanked God that boys and girls did not go to the same school.

And yet I missed her, and quite frequently decided that next Sunday I would write to her telling her all about myself and my doings. She'd be glad to get a letter at her school, and would show it to the other girls. I never did, of course, but the fact that I contemplated doing such a thing showed that Rosanne was not the sort of person whom one could easily put from one's mind.

It was lovely to see her again when one got home ; sheer delight until I would tell her about some prize that I had won, and she would ask whether the other competitor got the second one, or something of that sort. She would *not* be impressed, and appeared to take more pleasure in digging the confession from Mark that he had succeeded in something or other, than in listening to my Troubadour Song of Triumph.

If Giulia did me good by encouraging me to express myself, in being a wonderful audience, and in giving me more and more self-confidence, I suppose Rosanne was equally good for me in another way, inasmuch as, quite unintentionally, she goaded me, by her very indifference, to further and further effort.

To be perfectly frank, honest and self-revealing once again, my chief ambition was to impress her. I *would* impress her, I *would* make her admire me, I *would* make her admit that I was—I don't say a genius, but—what everybody else admitted me to be. If Mark thought me wonderful ; if my father had the greatest admiration as well as love for me ; if my mother had thought me perfect ; if Athene proclaimed me simply marvellous, and if Giulia thought there was no one on earth to

Equal me, surely they were not all wrong and Rosanne right?

And did she but know it, Rosanne was the cause of my joining the French Foreign Legion. Admittedly, I was carried away by a generous indignation for the wrongs of Belgium and of France, by a burning wrath against the appalling gospel of the right of Might, by the beautiful folly of youthful romanticism; but the real underlying motive was my determination to impress Rosanne.

It was a yearning, an *idée fixe*; and when, drunk with enthusiasm, words and wine, I sprang on a table and poured forth my soul in a torrent of eloquence, calling on all decent men to follow me and to fight for France, I said to myself as I stepped down,

“What of *that*, Rosanne? What do you think of me now?”

§ 4

Well! I have shown you the vast and fundamental difference between Mark and myself. I have given you some idea of the higher type of man to which I belong—sensitive, psychic, intellectual, artistic, poetic, highly strung—and I ask you to judge whether I was fit to endure what followed. I ask you whether I could be expected to bear, as Mark could bear, the prolonged physical and nervous strain, the agony of suffering, to which my rash and foolish act condemned me.

Hear my story, and judge for yourself—and for me.

V

EVEN yet I hate to write about my experiences in the French Foreign Legion. I get enough battle dreams, nightmares and attacks of the horrors, without raking all that up again. It was all very well, all very thrilling, interesting and romantic, until we got into the trenches, but we had not been long in that unbelievable hell of mud, cold, noise, stink, starvation, lice, illness, mutilation, death and misery unspeakable, when I began almost to hate Rosanne for being the real cause of my being there.

Well, I bore it as long as I could, and no man can bear anything longer. I did my utmost, and no man can do more. Let no one cast a stone save him who experienced, and survived unbroken, the indescribable hell of the first winter of the War in the trenches with the French Foreign Legion—whose lives were squandered without stint.

I worked and marched as cheerfully as anyone. I fought as desperately and bravely as anyone, until nerve and heart and sinew broke. When that happened—well, I was broken too. Finished. Thereafter I could no more stand up to it than a man with fractured legs can stand up.

I don't blame myself and I expect no one to blame me unless he is in a position to judge; unless he has lain for weeks under bitter cold rain, not in a ploughed

old but in a deep and stinking sewer, a latrine, in fact, in the mud of which he sinks almost to his knees as he tries to move, and up to his waist when he had to sit down : unless he has lived without being able to change his stiff and stinking clothes for forty days and forty nights on end : unless he has never had more than a couple of hours' sleep at a time, under these conditions : unless he has had inadequate food and none of it hot throughout such a period : unless he has been so swarming and crawling with lice that, when he could find a place of relatively hard clay on which he could lie down without fear of drowning, he could not sleep for the constant itching and burning of the whole of the skin of his body : unless he has stood on rotting corpses, lain down beside them, been sickened to the depths of his soul by the hideous sight and horrible stench of those unburied dead beside and beneath and around him : unless he has lived, for interminable days, with the noise of ten thousand thunderstorms shattering his ear-drums, as great shells burst by the parapet and parados, and in the trench itself : unless, daily and hourly, he has seen the men with whom he has eaten and drunk, worked and marched, slept and sung, killed, mangled and torn ; and had their blood and brains and entrails splashed over him ; been called upon, when almost too cold, sodden, weary, sick and weak to stand, to climb out of the flooded clay ditch and, with sinking empty stomach and aching head, take part in a " glorious " bayonet charge. . . .

At the end of my tether, I had the choice of going mad, killing myself or—escaping. I escaped, and care nothing for the condemnation of those who have had nothing from which to escape. Death I would have

welcomed, but from suicide I shrank, and only escape was left.

I first realized that I could go no further, give no more of myself when, in what were humorously called rest billets, I got a touch of dysentery during a typhoid epidemic. It was the last straw. There is nothing that takes the heart and courage and grit out of a man like illness of that kind. I gave up, and said I had typhoid fever. I had reached the point where I simply did not care what happened, if only I could lie down and keep still. Mark and some of our comrades carried me from the wretched dug-outs in which we sheltered when not tree-felling, road-building and trench-digging, and made me a sort of bed with branches, sand-bag sacks and a ground-sheet under a bush over which Mark hung a lorry-tarpaulin or something of the kind, which he had scrounged. Mark covered me with his overcoat, went on with his digging, and left me to it. When the Battalion was warned for return to the line, he absented himself without leave, hid as they marched off, and when night fell, came and joined me. There we hid in the woods, deserters, and while I lay and rested, Mark foraged for food—an extremely risky business, for if he had been caught he would have been court-martialled and shot, out of hand, as a deserter.

As a matter of fact, poor old Mark was just about as weary and ill as I was, but he is tougher than I am. He has little imagination, and his brain takes no toll of his nerves.

Because I had ceased to care what happened and would as willingly have been shot as not, we were not discovered and arrested for what we were, deserters from our Battalion that was holding a bad sector of the front line, miles away. But after a time, I came

to hate lying-up starving in those dripping woods almost more than being in the trenches. In the end, I think it was healthy hunger more than anything else that reconciled me to the prospect of our return, and I professed to feel better, declared myself to be convalescent and staged a quick recovery of my strength.

Far from being arrested and denounced, we were welcomed as though returned from the dead—of whom there were only too many in that typhoid-stricken death-trap that had been our “rest” billets.

Improved weather, better organization and the Battalion's transfer to a drier and healthier part of the line enabled me to carry on once again. It was noise, more than anything else, that caused my second breakdown. Had we been otherwise living in comfort and luxury, feasting like the friends of Lucullus, and sleeping in feather-beds, with nothing to do but enjoy life, that hellish din would alone have rendered preferable the vilest conditions imaginable, provided only that there had been silence.

The ghastly toll of lives, the hideous wounds, the imminence of mutilation and death, and the other horrors of the shells were less terrible than their noise. It wasn't merely that one was deafened, one was dithered shaken, stupefied, *shattered*. One was unable to think. Not only was one unable to hear, one felt unable to smell, taste, touch, almost unable to see. It sounds a kind of stupid exaggeration to talk of noise being so colossal that it affects the senses of touch, taste, smell and sight, but, after all, the senses are dependent entirely on the nerves, and the noise so shattered my nerves that they ceased to function—otherwise than as instruments of torture.

Again I reached a point where I could bear it no

longer, and decided that I must get out of it, once and for all. Not only had I had enough, but I felt that I had done enough. I had played my part, I had taken my share. Now let someone else take my place. Why should I go on to destruction, mental and physical, while there were hundreds of thousands, millions, who had taken no part at all. . . . *Gentlemen in England, now abed. . . .*

Well, I would have some sleep—abed too.

I had shrunk from the thought of suicide and still do so, but I knew of another way.

Although at first my mind rejected the idea as contemptible, I dallied more and more with the thought of self-mutilation. Sooner or later, I was certain to be shot. Almost every one of our original *escouade* had been killed. Mark and I were positive veterans, and could not possibly last much longer. Why wait till a German shot me, perhaps killing me, perhaps blinding me, perhaps maiming me for life? I determined to anticipate the German bullet.

I had a horribly narrow escape, and was almost miraculously saved. I shudder still to think of it.

One loathsome dawn, cold, wet and foggy, when my vital forces were at their lowest ebb and I was, both physically and mentally, depressed to the very depths, I was on sentry, staring through the fog at the German lines, not a hundred yards distant. The temptation was overwhelming. I was alone and there was no one in sight. Owing to the fog, I was invisible. But I must be wary. The penalty for self-mutilation was death. If the sound of a shot brought Sergeant Hervé, I must not be found wounded in the shoulder—with

burnt and smouldering coat. . . . I would fold my handkerchief into a pad, fix it against my left shoulder by tucking a corner under my cross-belt, lay my rifle on the parapet with the muzzle close to the handkerchief, lean forward and press the trigger with a fingertip . . . In spite of the shock, I must then stamp the handkerchief into the mud beneath my feet. If it were ever found, it would merely be a torn and muddy rag. . . . I must then snatch up my rifle and fire it toward the German trenches. Hervé or Corporal Ouspenski, whoever was nearest, would come at once and find me wounded. Before I staged a collapse or fainted from loss of blood, I would say that a reconnoitring German, or one who had lost his way in the fog, had approached the trench, fired at me and vanished into the mist. It might have been a sniper who had lain out all night between the lines. I would do it, and in a few hours I should be . . .

Bang! . . .

Another sentry, a few yards to my right, had fired his rifle, and I jumped as though actually caught in the actual commission of a crime, the guilt of which could only be punished with a death-sentence.

Sergeant Hervé must have been but a short distance away, for he passed me as I took my hand from the pocket in which I was fumbling for my handkerchief.

"*Sacré Dieu!* The *salauds* have got you, eh, Pelotti?" he said.

I heard Pelotti, a slender youngster who should have been at school, swear in Italian.

"*Iddio! . . . Cospetto! . . .* Through the arm, Sergeant."

"Through the arm, eh? The bastard must have been very close—by the sound of the shot."

"*Si! Si!* A few yards from the trench. . . .
Dio mio, it hurts!"

"You were keeping a good look-out, of course?"

"*Si! Si!*"

"Then you saw him coming?"

"*Si! Si!*"

"Why didn't you fire, then?"

"I hadn't time."

"He had time, though, hadn't he? Here, let me look at your coat. Ah, I thought so. Scorched. Burnt. Open the breach of your rifle."

"*Dio non voglia!* . . . I can't! . . . I can't. . . . My arm."

"Pick up that rifle. Open the breach."

I heard a sobbing groan and the sound of a breach-bolt being worked.

"*A-a-a-h!* So you didn't shoot, eh? Hadn't time, eh? How did that *empty* cartridge-case get into your breach, then?"

"Sergeant, I . . . I . . . I must have fired at him without realizing it."

"There was only one shot fired, Pelotti."

"*Si! Si!* Sergeant. . . . It was mine."

"Then how do *you* come to be shot? Yes, it was *yours* all right, Pelotti. . . . Come with me. . . ."

I felt sick. But not one-half as sick and faint as I felt at dawn next morning when I, with five other men of our *escouade*, stood ten yards from a *poiteau d'exécution* to which Pelotti, with bandaged eyes, was bound.

I had sinned in imagination, and I suffered in ghastly reality. Had the proceedings lasted another minute, I should have collapsed in a dead faint.

The officer's sword fell just in time, and I endeavoured to control my swaying rifle sufficiently to be sure of firing over Pelotti's head. Others of the firing squad were not so merciful—or were more merciful. But shoot him I could not.

There, but for the grace of God, stood Luke Rivers Tuyler.

There, a moment after the fall of the officer's sword, hung his riddled body.

§ 2

This incident gave me a real shock, and it was some time before I quite recovered from it. Apart from any question of malingering, my nerves were quite genuinely in a bad way, and I was the victim of a succession of nightmares in which I was bound to the execution-post, blindfolded and *awaiting* the volley. No words can tell how terrible, how mercilessly racking, was that awful suspense, waiting, waiting, for the volley of bullets that would shatter my chest. Waiting blindfolded, seeing and hearing nothing.

I got a kind of blindfold complex, and it had much to do with what followed.

A repeated variation of this dreadful nightmare was one in which poor little Pelotti was bound to the stake and I was his sole executioner. There he stood, weeping, begging and pleading for his life, while I was constrained slowly to raise my rifle and point it between his eyes while he shrieked,

“No! No! You'll *blind* me! You'll *blind* me!”

What with insomnia and a horrible internal condition of pain and weakness—dysentery, I suppose—I really was in a bad way.

It was Mark who saved me ; Mark and a French military *médecin*.

It was not so much that he magnified my illness as that he secured me the treatment that I needed, and that a hundred others needed more than I did, and which they did not get.

I was evacuated from rest-billets, where we were being worked to death, to an advance Base Hospital at Pont Mailleul.

Here that merry, merry Fate that watches over me arranged that I should have the next bed to a man from my own *escouade*, a Spaniard whom I had named Yrotavál y Rewes, and who had accepted the sonorous, high-sounding name with delight, and called himself Yrotavál thenceforth.

This man had fastened on to me at Toulon, appointing me his patron and employer from the very first, and sticking to me thereafter like a leech. A leech he was, too, but an uncommonly useful one, being an *ancien* who knew the ropes perfectly ; who knew when and how and whom to bribe ; who was a deadly, dangerous enemy to one's enemies ; and who had a faithful following of desperados of his own kidney, among whom were a brainless creature of gigantic strength called Araña and a villainous ex bull-fighter called Toro.

Why I allowed this Spaniard to constitute himself my combined mentor and servant, my cunning guide and humble follower, was because he was at once the most amusing and the most interesting chap I ever met. He was really witty, extraordinarily funny, and even so, was even funnier than he knew, by reason of his amazing Hispano-American-Franco-Cockney speech. And he was interesting by reason of the life he had

led—or the nine lives—of which were his double lives as a police agent and a police victim ; a Communist plotter and a betrayer of Communist plots ; an obscure limb of the Law and a far from obscure limb of Satan ; a notorious criminal, in fact.

I should think he was unique, a genuine museum-piece of villainy ; utterly conscienceless, shameless, and callous. Paradoxically, he did no wrong, for nothing to him *was* wrong. He was so amoral that he was incapable of dividing human actions up into two main classes of good deeds and bad deeds. The only classification he could make would be into the possible and the impossible. Nor would he ever have used the words legal and illegal, because, as a professing Anarchist born and bred, he recognized no such thing as Law and held that the curse of a people is a Government. Nevertheless, his high principles of Anarchism did not prevent his betraying his brother Anarchists to the Police, nor from earning an honest living as a police agent and spy. When he left his country for his country's good and fled for his life to America, he became a criminal pure and simple, and without any ideological nonsense about it.

Prudence later indicating the wisdom of abandoning America to its fate, he fled to London, thence hastily escaped to Sunny Spain, but found it too sunnily hot to hold him, bolted to Marseilles, his real spiritual home, and, thither still pursued, found refuge in the French Foreign Legion.

I freely confess that, in addition to finding him most amusing and extremely interesting, I found him very useful indeed, and not only as self-constituted batman, body-servant and body-guard. He steered me past all sorts of trouble, and, more than once, got me out of it,

when my headstrong and impulsive folly had, despite his warning, led me into it.

There was the case of Corporal Bjelavitch, a loathsome Bulgarian blackguard with whom I foolishly went to Marseilles against Yrotavál's advice. It seemed to me a wonderful opportunity of seeing the genuine underworld of the wickedest city on earth, inasmuch as Yrotavál was a member there, in good standing, and could play Virgil to my Dante in a tour through that lowest *cercle* of Hell. He did to admiration, and I shall never forget the *cinema bleu*; the night-club of the *Nervis*; the amazing, incredible and appalling brothels; the thieves' kitchens, Marie's House, and other underworld rendezvous that we visited.

That I might stay the course and see all the sights, I kept myself pure and unspotted and reasonably sober, while Corporal Bjelavitch, Yrotavál and his henchman Araña, made whoopee, revelled, wallowed, in fact. Never before had Yrotavál and Araña haunted the stews and purlieus of the Vieux Port in any other rôle than that of members of its underworld, *habitants*, natives, vendors, *solliciteurs*, *procureurs*, *souteneurs*, bullies, pimps and panders. Now, thanks to funds supplied by me, they came in the rôle of visitors, purchasers and patrons. But patrons with what a difference! Not pigeons to be plucked, but *cognoscenti*, connoisseurs who knew exactly where to go, what to demand and what to get—and what to pay for it.

And truculent! *M'Carben Diu*! as Yrotavál would say; it was not they who were in danger in that jungle of savage and dangerous human beasts.

Among the many virtues of Yrotavál and Araña was the ability to carry quite a lot of liquor like gentlemen.

Up to a point, the more they drank the more tight-lipped, wary, and quietly sinister they became. The swinish Bjelavitch, on the other hand, went completely to pieces, became violent, pugnacious and extremely objectionable; and, but for Yrotavál and Araña, would have been thrown out from, if not done-in at, more than one decorous and respectable haunt of depravity, vice, and villainy

When at long last we made our way back to Fort St. Jean whence (by grace and purchase) we had late passes, this animal Bjelavitch assaulted me in such a manner that I had no choice nor desire but to smash his face. Luckily for me, the powerful, bear-like brute was sufficiently drunk for this to be possible, and I beat him up in style. But next day he remembered. Doubtless he had a racking headache, a rebellious stomach and a congested liver. Certainly he had a vile temper, a vengeful spirit and a firm determination to compass my downfall, if not destruction. A properly worked charge of attempted desertion and violent assault upon a zealous non-commissioned officer who endeavoured to prevent it, should, he knew, get me anything from eight years' penal battalion to a death sentence. Almost certainly the latter, since the crime had been committed when on escort duty in time of war.

That, at any rate, was the view that Yrotavál took and, as I miserably realized, he should know.

"Sure boy," he growled, "dat buzzard would hang you in your own tripes. He'll frame you—and get you."

And both Araña and Toro, albeit inarticulate, made it clear to me by a wealth of gestures, what would happen when we got back to Toulon, Bjelavitch turned-in his Fort St. Jean papers, and then made his report

on my conduct. And if by the wildest chance and utter improbability, the Authorities did not support him to the full and punish me to the utmost, the N.C.O.s (a close corporation that would act as one man in the event of a member of the guild being offended) would see to it that if I did not die an early death, it would at any rate be the consummation I would most earnestly desire.

Within an hour of reaching the *chambrée*, Yrotavál drew me aside.

"It's you or dat *batteur*," he growled. "It's you on the spot or dat b—— up de spout. . . . What's it worth?"

"What do you mean?"

"Talk Turkey, Bo. Dis is serious. What's de rake-off if dat goddam guy gets his, *pronto*? . . . And it has got to be to-night. . . . If Bellybitch is alive when Orderly Room opens to-morrow, it's *tckkk* for you," and with the unpleasant sound he made a yet more unpleasant gesture and grimace, as of one who dies in some discomfort of a hempen or steel affection of the throat.

"There are no witnesses that I hit the swine."

"No witnesses hell! Dere's t'ree."

"You'd give evidence against me? You and Araña and Toro would give evidence in his favour?"

"We gotta live, ain't we? If we didn't get a hard-labour stretch for beggaring-up de Court Martial and defeating de ends of Justice by perjury, the N.C.O.s would get us. Get us for keeps too. We gotta live."

And eyeing me sideways, with a slow smile breaking the straight gash of his lipless mouth and creasing his leathern face, he added,

"But dat sunnavabitch ain't gotta live."

Well, I had realized that the French Foreign Legion was an interesting institution, and that life therein held its little surprises, but I had hardly imagined that a reversion to the days and customs of the hiring of *bravos* was among them. And if it were, I had no inclination for the pastime.

"It's you or him, Sonny," murmured the tempter.

"What's the least I'll get from a Court Martial?"

"Death, anyway. In chains, boulder-carrying on the Colomb-Bechar Road, any time during the next eight years if you are unlucky; or next week, the day after the *Conseil de Guerre* has given you the Thumbs-Down."

An unattractive prospect.

"It's you or him, Son. *P'quoi faire l'andouille?*¹ What's it worth—for de bastard to meet wit' an accident?"

"Oh, an accident? I don't mind an accident," I said.

"Could you lend me t'ree hundred francs?" smiled Yrotavál. "See, there's t'ree of us—me and Araña and Toro. If it's to be a bad accident . . ."

Twelve pounds. Yes, I could certainly afford twelve pounds. Much cheaper price than eight years, or as much of eight years as I might survive, in the notoriously murderous Penal Battalions (which are not to be confused with the Bat d'Af, wherein life is said to be bearable). If twelve pounds was to make the difference between my destruction and the foul Bjelavitch's meeting with an incapacitating accident, well, twelve pounds be it—or twelve hundred.

"Er—yes, Yrotavál. I could lend you three hundred francs if you'll promise to pay me the . . ."

¹ *Why play the fool?*

"Pay! I'll *pay* all right," growled Yrotavál, pocketing the wad.

People who read examples of its manifestations are apt to sneer at the long arm of coincidence. It is, nevertheless, a fact that that very night Corporal Bjelavitch was killed. Inasmuch as he was stabbed in the back, one might safely say he was murdered.

A wonderful piece of good luck for me and another marvellously narrow escape.

After our trip to Marseilles, Yrotavál quite finally adopted me as his *copain*. Literally, and somewhat to Mark's annoyance, I fear, he hardly let me out of his sight. I don't for one moment suggest that Mark was jealous of the good Yrotavál, but he did not seem to think that he was the most desirable of companions for me, nor that his influence was wholly for good!

Poor, dear old Mark, he never appreciated Yrotavál at his real worth, although the little Catalan kept him in fits of laughter with his wit and humour and inexhaustible fund of stories. He was indeed a fellow of infinite jest; of most excellent fancy.

§ 3

I confess that I missed him horribly when he was wounded and evacuated from the trenches, and that I rejoiced at finding him in hospital; for not only would he keep me amused there, but would fag for me and look after me like a father, or better still, like a damned good servant.

Of course he was what my brother called him, an utter scoundrel and villainous blackguard; but, as I was wont to point out to dear old Mark, whose business was it, save that of his victims?

Granted that he was a murderer, he didn't murder me; agreed that he was a thief, he didn't rob me; admitted that he was as treacherous as hell, he had been a faithful friend to me. So what?

"A bit of a viper in the bosom, I should say," Mark had growled in his best heavy-father style.

"Wrong there, Cocky," I had replied. "The bosom is nice and warm. It would be when you went to chuck the old viper out into the cold that he might snap."

"A damned bad man to cross."

"Right, old chap—don't let's cross him," was my wise conclusion.

He *was* a bad man to cross too, as a certain Sergeant Paggallini discovered—if he lived long enough. He was one of those admirable Corsican N.C.O.s, efficient, competent, trustworthy—and brutes to their fingertips. He had bullied, threatened and insulted Yrotavál in a way in which a very senior *ancien* should not be insulted by a young Sergeant, and he had struck me brutally in the face when we were in the trenches. It had only been Yrotavál's hand on my wrist that had prevented me from hitting him back—and being shot dead, on the spot, for he was an N.C.O. who kept the flap of his pistol-holster open.

"We'll get the bastard," he whispered later. "Wait till we're all out in the front garden together, late one night. I dunno who'll come home wit' de milk in de mornin'—but I know one who won't. . . ."

Within the week Sergeant Paggallini was sent with six men to make a reconnaissance patrol to the German lines, with orders to report on the condition of the wire, and bring back what evidence he could as to the identity of the battalion opposite to us.

Crouching, creeping, crawling, wriggling, we made our way, unobserved, across No-Man's-Land, lying flat and freezing solid whenever a Very light shed its baleful brilliant glare over our part of the Line. At the end of an hour or so, we were near the German trench and Paggallini slowly wriggled forward. The voice of the man lying close beside me whispered.

"Now we got de bastard—goin' or comin'. *Il va avaler ses batuettes.*"¹

Some distance away a Very pistol was fired and by its faint light I could see in front of me a silhouette that slowly, gently, moved. French—not German.

A rifle beside me cracked. There was instant activity in the trench; Very lights went up; sentries promptly shot at nothing in particular; ragged rifle-fire broke out; and a machine-gun suddenly started its hideous staccato coughing.

Among the unburied dead we lay, face downward, motionless as the corpses.

The firing died down, and soon the night was again as quiet, or as noisy, as usual. It was hopeless now, of course, to attempt to make a surprise raid on the trench.

"Looks like de Sergeant's got lost, don't it? *Il a son affaire!*"² whispered Yrotavál, after a long interval of immobility. "Just too bad. Me for home."

Of the reconnoitring patrol six returned, Sergeant Paggallini not being of their number.

Later, Yrotavál took it upon him to remind me that he had committed two murders in my interest and at my instigation!

¹ *He's going to hand in his checks.*

² *He has got his!*

Well, such was the man Yrotavál of whom I now made real use, made the instrument of my salvation, the occasion being the inexcusable, shameless, and shameful bombing of Pont Mailleul Base Hospital.

VI

TO be quite honest—and once again, that is my sole object and firm intention—the bombing of Pont Mailleul hospital was, so far as Yrotavál and I were concerned, a mere nothing.

In the trenches we had had more shattering experiences and narrower escapes a hundred times; and although on the occasion of this bombing, scores of splendid doctors, noble nurses and brave, wounded men, met their deaths or received ghastly wounds, all I got was an idea.

Yrotavál and I, convalescent and due for return to the Line on the morrow, were sitting side by side in the sunshine, outside our ward, I listening with one ear to his very funny stories, tall yarns, amusing locutions and intriguing blasphemies, and with the other to the droning of an aeroplane, while I pondered ways and means of prolonging this ineffably lovely and gracious period of respite from the horrors of mud, blood, wounds, hunger, filth, lice and the rest of the hell of war.

Suddenly it dawned on us that the aeroplane was a Boche . . . that a bomb was falling . . . that people were running for their lives.

Yrotavál, swift as a panther, flung himself on the ground and promptly I followed suit. There was the

usual shattering concussion and hellish bang, a roar of sound almost too loud to hear, and we were covered with earth, while all about us walls fell, windows were blown in, roofs were blown off, and tiles came clattering down.

For us of the Legion, straight from the hottest of the fighting, it was almost routine. Getting up on all fours and shaking the earth from my head and hair, I took my hands from my face where I had almost instinctively placed them when expecting an explosion, and saw Yrotavál kneeling up, face to face with me.

A string of oaths, each more curious than the last, issued from the corner of his twisted mouth. He spat mud and shook himself like a dog.

"Say, Bo," he suddenly grinned. "We'll sure get something outa dis. Me, I'm suffering from shock. Shell-shock. Month in hospital down Monte Carlo way. Nix on trenches to-morrow. God bless dat blasted Bosche."

And suddenly the Great Idea was born in my mind, sprang, fully developed and complete, strong, undefeatable, armed *cap-à-pie*, as sprang Minerva from the brain of Jove.

But it was from the brain of the Devil that it came, that temptation, sudden, utterly irresistible.

Perhaps, had I slept on it, I could have found the strength to resist; but impulsive ever, I fell instantly, and my fall was irretrievable. I spoke and my words were irrevocable.

"Yrotavál—I *am blind*," I whispered.

My *âme damnée* stared open-mouthed.

"Blind!" he whispered. And then the mouth closed like a steel trap, twisted in a leering grin, and partially opened again to whisper,

"Sure! Sure you're blind! You said it, Buddy. An' I can give you some dope that'll make you a helluva lot blinder too! . . . And me? I'm deaf and dumb. Sure! *Ca fait ma balle!*"¹

And collapsing again upon the ground, he closed his eyes and emitted piteous animal sounds, while, I kneeling, bent double, covered my eyes with my hands and sobbed aloud with hysterical tears and laughter.

When the hideous mess was cleared up, the dead and the dying separated from the wounded, the shell-shocked and comparatively unhurt *légionnaire* Luke Rivers Tuyler L.M. 6752, English, was found to be totally blind, while *légionnaire* Ramon Caballero L.M. 9886, Spanish, was both deaf and dumb. Two pitiable cases of acute shell-shock.

§ 2

There was soon no doubt about the efficacy of the stuff that Yrotavál gave me for causing an inflamed and ugly condition of the eyes. There was no mistake about the pain it caused, either. I felt I was doing a foolish thing, but I also felt that I should be doing something a thousand times more foolish if I allowed myself to be sent back to the trenches. That way madness lay. Agony, mutilation, death, were one thing: madness was another. And I felt it was worth the risk.

I was under no illusions as to Yrotavál being a thorough-paced scoundrel, but there was always a reason as well as a method in his villainy, and he could have no possible object in really blinding me.

¹ *That suits me fine.*

That he was profoundly ignorant, I of course knew ; but he swore by God, His Mother, His Son, and all the Saints, that he knew, from long and wide experience, that the stuff was harmless. It was used by all the best beggars who earned their livings by sitting in the sun on Cathedral steps ; and although their eyes were hideous to look upon and they were blind all day, they could see well enough when they went off duty ; and they died, at a ripe old age, with their sight unimpaired : it was used by all the best criminals (who could get hold of a supply of it) when they wished to go blind in gaol, whether with the view to evading punitive tasks such as the work of the oakum-picking and mail-bag-making variety ; or that they might evoke the pity of the visiting Justices and obtain amelioration of circumstances or remission of sentence : and it was used by young men who wished to evade the draft when the time for their conscription arrived, particularly when war threatened or was in actual progress. According to Yrotavál, there was a terrible lot of this blindness at the time of the American-Spanish War and when there was active campaigning in Morocco.

Under the influence of the acute pain caused by its first application, I assured the blackguard that I would shoot him if it really blinded me.

" Sure, Bo," he grinned. " You'll be able to see to do it on a black night in a dark room in which I ain't. *M'Carben Diu!* It will improve your sight . . . But don't use it if you can't take it. It wants just a little guts—like any old Spanish beggar-woman's got."

What the stuff was I don't know to this day, for whether by reason of superstition, idiotic mystery-mongering, or some kind of gleam of honour among

thieves, Yrotavál firmly and finally refused to give away the secret of his precious preparation. But among its ingredients were cordite, tobacco-juice, soap and something to which Yrotavál mysteriously alluded as "sumpin from the chimist." (Possibly atropine?)

Certainly it was more efficacious when compounded with the anonymous something-from-the-chemist, but without this ingredient it was, I can testify, sufficiently painful and inflammatory. And certainly no one, I thought, not even an ophthalmic surgeon, could doubt that one's eyes were in a terrible condition, whether caused by injury or disease.

§ 3

What, under normal conditions, could be a more fatiguing, hopelessly boring, well-nigh heart-breaking way of killing time than hanging about in the waiting-rooms of French provincial railway-stations, the corridors of hospitals, the ante-rooms of medical officers' bureaux, waiting, hungry and tired, for long weary hours, and then being peremptorily dismissed and told to return on the morrow?

What, under the conditions to which Yrotavál and I had grown accustomed in the trenches, could have been more peaceful, restful and delightful than such waiting about—I, with a bandage about my eyes and a luggage-label, on which was scribbled *Aveugle*, tied to a button of my tunic; Yrotavál with dirty cotton-wool in his ears, a look of bravely borne suffering on his face, and a label marked *Sourd et Muet* on his coat. When evacuated from the ruins of the Pont Mailleul Hospital we received every sympathy and kindness. At the "Shell-shock" Hospital we got little sympathy,

no kindness, and considerable suspicion. Fortunately, the administrative Medical Officers were worked almost to death; were too harassed and over-driven to find proper time to eat and to sleep.

The *Médecin Major* who examined me there was frankly sceptical. Having heard all I had to say, which was a good deal, he examined my eyes which Yrotavál's 'dope' had made extremely painful as well as repulsively ugly. In the middle of this swift and somewhat cursory examination he said abruptly,

"You are lying."

"I cannot see, *Monsieur le Major*," I replied quietly but firmly. "I am totally blind."

"None are so blind as those who won't see, are they?" was the sarcastic reply. "Unfortunately I haven't got an ophthalmoscope here, or I would soon make absolutely certain whether you are malingering, as I know you are . . . You say the bomb fell in front of you, there was a blinding flash and a terrific concussion, and you have seen nothing since? . . . Well, I wonder if you can explain why it is that the pupils of your eyes contract as I shine this light into them, eh? If you were blind, they wouldn't change. You may be quite clever at refraining from blinking, but the muscles of the eyelids are voluntary muscles and those of the iris are involuntary. Can't stop *them* from contracting, can you?"

"I can't see, *Monsieur le Médecin Major*," I repeated.

"To my mind there is no lesion whatsoever, not the slightest sign of one. It's your heart that is wrong, not your eyes. You are *bon pour le service*. And I . . ."

"I cannot see, *Monsieur le Médecin Major*," I repeated.

"Perhaps you can feel, then," he shouted, springing up and aiming a blow at my face with his open hand.

Had I been blind, I should not have known that he was about to strike me, and my eyes would not have moved. Not being blind, I could see that the blow was about to fall, and contrived to refrain from flinching or blinking. He didn't strike me, of course, but he could not, as he had hoped and expected, triumphantly shout,

"There! You flinched! How did you know my hand was approaching your face?"

For a moment he regarded me thoughtfully. Then suddenly picking up a pen from the table beside him, thrust it straight at my right eye.

I could have told him that Yrotavál and I had practised that game until practice had made me perfect. Not the faintest flicker of an eyelid answered the sudden dart of the pen-point, which stopped a fraction of an inch from my eye-ball.

Again the doctor, who was not an oculist, regarded me thoughtfully. Then he picked up the printed form which had been given me at Pont Mailleul and read it again.

"H'm . . . *Volunteer*. English . . . *Shell-shocked*. *Blind*. . . . So you volunteered, did you?" he said.

"On the outbreak of war, *Monsieur le Médecin-Major*," I replied.

"And now you regret it, eh? Well, I'll send you to Orléans. They've got oculists there and all the apparatus. They'll soon settle your hash. And if you are malingering, as I think you are, they'll know what to do with you."

On the whole Yrotavál had an easier time than I did. If a man chooses to go dumb, no doctor on earth

can prove he isn't, and it is nearly as difficult to convict any wily individual of shamming deafness.

I wasn't present at Yrotavál's examination by a choleric and over-worked doctor; but, according to his story, they accepted his deafness when no light of joy suffused his eye on being asked whether he'd have a mug of wine, and when he refrained from giving a start of surprise as a pistol was fired just behind his head.

After a few simple tricks and obvious traps, he was given three months' medical leave and instructions to proceed to the same medical-observation convalescent-camp-hospital at Orléans.

§ 4

But at Orléans, where my hash was to be settled by Army Medical Corps oculists with their malingerer-detecting apparatus, and Yrotavál was to be kept under observation until inadvertently he heard the voice of some charmer and replied in his own, we never arrived.

We lost ourselves.

And, away from the cold official atmosphere of cruel suspicion, a blinded soldier led by his deaf and dumb comrade, two pathetic, shell-shocked orphans of the storm of war, we received nothing but sympathy, and were treated with nothing but kindness by all who encountered us on our *via dolorosa* to—wherever we might be going. Refraining from using our railway warrants, I bought our tickets in the ordinary way, and having set off toward Orléans in the rôle of *réformés* proceeding to convalescent hospital, we changed our route, and eventually took train for Le Havre in the guise of English *légionnaires* going on leave.

It was at Le Havre that Yrotavál, skilled in such quests, discovered a doctor of the type we wanted. The war threw up quite a number of them in France, men whose temporary army-pay was insufficient for their luxuries, not to mention their necessities, and who drove a thriving trade, in pronouncement of physical unfitness and provision of documents to that effect, on behalf of those who could pay for them.

We had some bad scares, we had some good luck, and we had the immeasurable advantage of the times, so abnormal, so out of joint, that what would have been utterly impossible in peace-time, was relatively easy.

Curious eyes stared at us as we approached the leave-boat, and friendly voices sympathized with us when it was learned that we were two Englishmen discharged by *Conseil de Réforme* from the French Foreign Legion.

At the foot of the gangway we were questioned, for the last time, by an A.P.M. not accustomed to seeing French soldiers travelling to England in uniform. To him I explained that we were not French soldiers going on leave, but a couple of Britons discharged from the French Foreign Legion.

Yrotavál, as one mechanically performing an over-familiar rite, produced his bogus forms, one of which bore the words :

| | |
|----------------------|---|
| <i>Nom :</i> | John Brown. |
| <i>Régiment :</i> | Premier Regiment. Premier Bataillon de Marche Legion Étrangère. |
| <i>Déclaration :</i> | Congé de Réforme Retraite 25% |

and the other :

| | | | |
|--|--|-------------|--|
| | | John Brown. | |
| Né—12. Août 1884. | | } | |
| À Londres. | | | |
| Canton de Londres | | } | |
| Département de Londres. | | | |
| Resident à Paris. | | } | |
| Département de Seine. | | | |
| Profession de Palefrenier. | | } | |
| Fils de | | | |
| et de | | } | |
| Domicilié à | | | |
| Canton de | | } | |
| Département de | | | |
| Où Engagé, Volontaire ; durée, guerre ; le 15 S'bre 1914, à Paris, département de Seine. | | | |
| Numéro de la Liste Matricule 9886. | | | |

Fumbling in the inner pocket of my tunic, I also produced my forged discharge and my matricule certificate.

A minute later we were *free*.

* A deceased comrade whose body Yrotavál had robbed.

VII

IT was all simply wonderful. Never before was there such a return of such a hero. I enjoyed every minute of it.

The great thing, of course, was the inevitable bliss of the sense of *escape*, and the unspeakable joy of the return to peace and plenty, to safety and sanity, from what must surely be the worst hell that man ever made for himself on this earth.

And in addition to this was the tremendous fun of it all, the sheer enjoyment of the immensity of the colossal joke; and, I freely admit it, the very real, if deplorable, pleasure of being in the limelight, of being the very centre and cause of the tremendous fuss that everybody made of this wonderful occasion. Even I almost grew tired of the perpetually played air of "See the conquering hero comes"; and almost I had a surfeit of veal by the time the last fatted calf had been sacrificially killed in my honour.

But in time the excitement died away, and I settled down to the completest appreciation and enjoyment of the marvellous life of perfect peace and luxurious glorious ease. Or almost perfect, for naturally I had to be on my guard, and at first, to be very careful indeed. Not that it was as difficult as might be imagined by anyone who has never tried shamming blindness, because I indentured myself to a very

thorough apprenticeship by keeping myself actually blind for some time. Whenever I left my own room, I wore a bandage over my eyes, and quickly learned from practical experience exactly how a blind man behaves. When tired of this, I had only to make my way back to my room, lock the door, remove my bandage and settle down for a quiet read, smoke or nap.

For weeks and months I could never have too much rest, and I desired nothing better than to while away the greater part of the day in my own private room, my peculiar and personal place apart, that gloriously safe and happy haven where none could disturb and bother me.

When, with returning health and strength, I grew more restless and desirous of more active life, I got Rosanne to procure for me a pair of the blackest sun-glasses that could be got, and sometimes wore these instead of my bandage. I felt safer when wearing them when I removed my bandage, as they were a constant reminder that I must not see. Even so, in the early days, I was more than once on the point of doing something which no blind man would have done, or of realizing the presence of someone or something, of which only by sight I could have been aware.

However, I never aroused the slightest suspicion in the mind of anyone, and in course of time, felt quite safe in venturing out of my room for a little while, without either the bandages or the dark glasses.

My first trouble was with Athene. Her truly kind, sympathetic and generous heart was affected to its shallow depths; and her one idea was to get me the best of advice, the best treatment procurable; and it was her constant demand that I should come to

Town with her to see various Harley Street wizards who, by her account, could raise the dead, and to whom the restoring of sight to the blind would be a matter of no difficulty.

I assured her, with perfect truth, that I had seen all the doctors whom I wished to see, that I was entirely satisfied that they were right, and that I had not the slightest intention of seeing any more. . . .

In the end she had to be content with my promise to visit her pet oculist, if my eyes pained me, if I realized that any change in them was taking place, if I found I was becoming sensitive to light, and finally, if and when I felt differently about it and equal to a journey to London for the purpose.

Fortunately, she had to hurry back to resume the Red Cross duties from which she had obtained, or taken, leave on hearing from Rosanne what had happened to me and in what condition I had made my way back to Courtesy Court.

Rosanne. . . .

Rosanne was marvellous. She rose to the occasion as though it were *the* occasion of her life. Perhaps it was. And if, at times, I was really rather ashamed of myself for the genuine grief, pain, and mental suffering that I was causing her, I comforted and reassured myself with the realization of the compensatory pleasure and joy that I was giving her.

No, I will withdraw "pleasure and joy" as not being the *mots justes*. . . . No, again, I won't. . . . For Rosanne did undoubtedly find a high and noble form of pleasure in ministering to me, and a sort of sacred or religious joy of the purest and least earthly kind, in lightening my terrible burden, assuaging my

dumb suffering, and doing for me anything and everything that one human being can do for another. (Or almost everything.)

I cheated Rosanne, and, did she know the truth, she would probably feel that I wronged her—but in point of fact, I did her good. Naturally, I am not so egotistical a self-deceiver as to take credit for it, but the fact remains that I provided Rosanne with what most she needed.

I gave her a purpose in life, and a great and noble purpose. I brought out all that was best in her. Nothing could change my mind on that point; no one could possibly convince me that my return to Courtesy Court, apparently blinded, was anything but an unmixed blessing for Rosanne. She quickly, and one might say visibly, turned from a somewhat flip-pant, slightly hard, faintly superior and self-centred girl, whose day was a trivial round of hospital-visiting, charity-bazaar-running, committee-attending, and other petty war-work-pursuing, into a warm-hearted, devoted nurse, a real ministering angel—a woman with an aim in life, a single aim, on which she concentrated the whole of her energy, thought and love.

She had always loved me, up to a point, although we bickered from morning till night. Now she really loved me, I knew, with all her heart and soul and mind.

From the moment I walked into the hall, guided by Yrotavál, and heard her cry of shocked horror, I knew it; and it gave me no surprise when she dropped everything to devote herself to me, and from that moment stopped her training and abandoned her intention of becoming a V.A.D.

So, though I tricked her rather disgracefully, she deserved well of me for turning her from a young girl into an adult woman, from a girl who had never felt much, into a woman over-brimming with feeling ; and from a somewhat useless atom in a world of uses, into an actual force with a living purpose and determination for good—the good of the man she loved.

She, too, of course, kept on at me about doctors and oculists, but, more quickly than Athene—being far wiser and more understanding than her mother—understood my attitude, my reluctance to go through it all again, only to hear at the end of it the same death-knell of a sentence. I had no need to tell her that she might be quite sure that the French Army doctors would not have invalidated me out of the Army, as totally blind, unless I were so. And when I assured her that, on my own initiative and at my own expense, I had gone, when passing through Paris, to the great Renier, an eye-surgeon and oculist of European reputation, and that he had confirmed their diagnoses, she appeared to accept the situation and my word, though doubtless she did so with the mental reservation that she would get me to go and see the best oculist in London, later on.

Who, that knew Rosanne before and after my return, could doubt that I had done her anything but good ? I repeat ; she was a different girl. So different that whereas, before, I loved her as a brother and admired her with reservations, I now had no reservations whatsoever, and could have loved her as a lover.

Could have done—but for Giulia Brent-Grayleigh.

It is an amazing thing, this aberration of the mind, this madness of the soul that is called love.

Can a man love two women at once? I believe some men can, because some men are naturally, instinctively, and fundamentally polygamous. Had there been no Giulia, I believe I should have loved Rosanne wholly and completely; or, at any rate, should have thought I did. Had there been no Rosanne, I am quite certain that I should have loved Giulia completely. And that last is a somewhat foolish observation, because I did love Giulia thus.

So I did Rosanne.

Did I?

I don't know; and it is a pointless and unprofitable pursuit, this cold-blooded analysis of my feelings.

Still, I am out for truth, and I should like to get the matter straight. There's a wonderful satisfaction in getting things down in black and white and having them clear in your mind. At least I find it so, nowadays, driven in upon myself as I am; dwelling as I do in my paper prison.

Yes, I loved them both; but there was more passion in my love for Giulia; more gratitude, regard and respect in my love for Rosanne.

Was it pompous old Tennyson (I've never wallowed very deeply in the sloppy slush of his alleged poetry) who said that we needs must love the highest when we see it?

Of these two women, I was well aware that Rosanne was the higher, but I did not love her the more.

Or, damn it, did I?

Definitely I knew that Rosanne was the finer woman of the two; that she was noble, splendid; and that I owed her a deep debt of gratitude. But it was Giulia who stirred my blood. It was for Giulia that my heart beat faster. It was Giulia to whom I

turned for—what shall I say? Let me be honest and say—for approval, unquestioning and unqualified; and for that warm, unstinted, ungrudging *passion*, that human passion of love which human passion demands and needs.

Like Rosanne, Giulia was not only willing, but anxious, to give up everything else and concentrate on doing all she could for me. She, too, had filled her days, since war had broken out, with the kind of work that most such girls of the leisured class did to the best of their ability. I don't think she would ever have joined any uniformed organization such as the V.A.D.s even if she could have got her mother to agree to her doing so. She had led a sheltered life and was very much of a home bird. She liked her little comforts, lacked initiative, and had no yearnings for the rough realities of Life, nor for self-sacrifice. Nevertheless, she was anxious to help, and most willing to do whatever she could, within limits—the limits of home and the life to which she was accustomed.

All these little hospital-visiting and similar activities she now dropped, and placed herself at Rosanne's disposal for sharing in the work of looking after me. Rosanne must appoint her as confidential secretary, first-assistant, second-in-command, head nurse or what she liked, and count upon her as being ready, willing and able to come at any time, and for any length of time, to entertain me, talk to me, write letters for me, read to me, play to me (for she was an accomplished pianist), take me out for walks, or drive me in her car on shopping and other expeditions.

Rosanne was only too grateful, for, of course, she could not devote the whole of her time to me, being as she

was, since my father's death and her mother's departure to London, in sole charge of the running of Courtesy Court.

Giulia was of course in love with me, as Rosanne was ; and although her love could not exceed Rosanne's in breadth and depth and strength, in sympathy and loving-kindness, and the desire to serve, to help, to protect, it did exceed hers in passion. I do not say that Rosanne, with the Scottish and Anglo-Saxon strain in her American ancestry, was cold ; but I do say that Giulia, half Italian and wholly Italianate, was warm—indeed hot-blooded and passionate—as who should know better than I to whom she had frequently given the ultimate proof that her love was volcanic, a thing of passion and of fire.

So here was I in a situation of which the comfort approached perfection, a position of almost Paradisical luxury and delight ; and, moreover, loved by two lovely women whose one desire and great happiness was to wait upon me hand and foot.

Almost. Not quite. There was a fly in the precious ointment of my blessed joy and glorious peace.

Yrotavál, my fellow-conspirator and partner in innocent crime—for I still maintain that my deception was harmless, nay positively beneficial to those to whom I gave occasion and opportunity for self-fulfilment and self-expression in lavishing upon me their devotion—was troublesome.

Who hath a partner hath a master, and, quite soon, Yrotavál became masterful. It was all right at first, and I could jokingly refer to him as some people do to the cook or butler who has been with them for half a century, as having “ turned from a good servant into

a bad master, or at any rate from a fine and faithful servant into a difficult and exacting master."

At first he was only too thankful to find himself safe ; and safe, moreover, in a place where he had every kindness and consideration, and a life of real ease and comfort, such as he had never known.

But one day, after we had had " words " on the subject of his attentions to Rosanne's own personal maid, he came right out into the open with a remark to the effect that should he tire of this dull and hum-drum life and decide to live elsewhere, it might be awkward for me, unless we parted on the best of terms—his own terms, to wit.

With a grin and an inimitable leer, he remarked that with all our experience, we had never seen a bomb burst with quite such effect as the bomb-shell of his exposure of me would have, if it burst in this quiet little corner of England.

" *Si, si, Patrón !* " he smiled. "*Ça va faire un drole d'effet.*"

And I reflected at leisure, and at length, on the truth of his statement, his under-statement, that the results of exposure would be uncommonly droll for—me.

Like Jeshurun, the brute began to wax fat and kick ; to give trouble in the servants' hall ; offend the maids ; annoy the cook, by what she considered outrageous and outlandish demands—such as for his favourite mess of bread-crumbs, mutton-fat and garlic ; and thoroughly to upset Johnson, the butler.

And in some way, he completely failed to please Rosanne. In point of fact, that is also something of an under-statement ; for he did more than fail to please her. He succeeded in making her absolutely loathe him. How, Heaven knows ! To my mind it was just

a piece of feminine unreasonableness on her part, for she could never bring any definite charge against him.

Nor did it seem greatly to improve matters when I pointed out to her, what was the simple truth, that Giulia, far from taking the same view of Yrotavál, rather liked him ; did like him, in fact ; found him very interesting and really rather charming.

VIII

WHAT did upset Yrotavál and, to some extent me, was Mark's return from the Front. I was, of course, truly delighted to see him home again, safe and sound, but was shocked at his condition. So far as such a powerful man as Mark could be—and he was very tough indeed, of rock-like strength of mind, body, and soul—he was a bundle of nerves; and I must admit that the sight of me didn't do him any good either. He had evidently had an appalling time, had lived face to face with death, night and day, under about the worst conditions that a human being can endure and survive, was just about at the end of his tether, and scarcely equal to the blow of seeing his beloved Luke—broken and blinded.

He being so ill, shattered and worn out himself, the fuss he made of me was really rather pathetic.

But glad as I was to see him, his coming didn't really improve things for me, beyond making a little change and excitement in an existence that was already becoming rather humdrum.

In the first place, he, of course, started the bother and annoyance that I had already gone through with Athene and Rosanne about seeing oculists and getting not only the best opinion available but several of them; and he conspired, for my own good of course, with our own chap Watson and with Aber-

nethy, the nerve-specialist whom Rosanne brought down periodically to deal with my shell-shock and general mental and physical condition. I was, of course, pretty ill by the time I got home, and no nonsense about it, whether one called my symptoms those of shell-shock or of the neurasthenia that inevitably follows intolerable stress and strain, or just the results of general weakness due to malnutrition and prolonged excessive tension and fatigue.

This Abernethy was a queer, cross-grained chap, and although he was never actually offensive to me or difficult with Rosanne, he seemed to think that anyone, who wasn't either obviously unhinged in mind or mortally stricken in body, must be something of a *malade imaginaire*. He bluntly told Mark that what he would like to do would be to send me to a nursing-home run by a famous neurologist who was supposed to be affecting wonderful cures by means of psychotherapy, especially cases of shell-shock, to which, incidentally, he always alluded as "alleged" shell-shock, professing to believe that there was no such thing! Fortunately Rosanne would not hear of my going to a nursing-home, and it did not take me long to persuade Mark that it was just plain cruelty to pester me with oculists in my present condition.

Of course, I wouldn't have dreamed of agreeing to anything of the sort, but in point of fact, it was never even proposed to me, as Rosanne put her foot down heavily and immediately, when Abernethy suggested it. She could and would do all the nursing that was necessary!

There is no doubt that Abernethy was a brilliant alienist—too brilliant from my point of view—and I am not sure that I completely deceived him. Of

course I was in a pretty bad way when he first saw me ; but perfect rest, good food, and Rosanne's nursing had very quickly and rather marvellously improved my condition—had put me almost right, in fact ; and it was none too easy to continue to play the nerve-shattered invalid in front of Watson, much less Abernethy. As to the blindness, I simply insisted on wearing either my bandage or my dark glasses when either doctor was present, and any suspicion that might have been entertained on that subject could only have been based on my refusal to let them examine my eyes.

They did not want to do this from the professional-oculist point of view, but because, by an examination of the retina, they could learn a good deal concerning my nervous condition, and whether there was any symptom of cerebro-spinal sclerosis or anything of that kind.

As I got better and stronger, the less I enjoyed Abernethy's visits and Mark's anxiety to bring him down oftener and to hold long consultations with him and Watson about me. Mark was too solicitous altogether—for my liking and comfort—and I had to make it quite clear that nothing upset me more, nothing set me back more surely, than these medical attacks and invasions—attacks on my slowly built-up self-confidence, invasions of my painfully erected mental defences, and of my precious privacy.

Fortunately for me, Mark's mind, unlike my own, is more notable for strength than for subtlety.

In the second place he started another bother with his attitude to Yrotavál. He had never liked the old scoundrel, and now he seemed positively to hate him. In point of fact, I think he was a bit jealous that I

saw so much more of Yrotavál, my valet and constant attendant, than I did of him.

I think, too, that Rosanne turned him against the rascal, for Mark had not been in the house a month before he was talking about my sacking him and getting a male nurse who was also a trained valet. God knows that, by that time, I'd have been glad to see the back of Yrotavál, but the irony of it was that, while I agreed with every word that Mark said, I was compelled stoutly to defend the blackguard, to swear that I simply could not get along without him, and that whatever else they did to me in my blindness, they must not deprive me of the one person who was now the prop and mainstay of my existence.

Mark hated that, even more than I disliked saying it.

"*What!* Yrotavál the mainstay of . . ." he protested. "Surely Rosanne is *that*. So far as I can see, she simply lives for you; thinks of nothing else but you and your comfort and welfare and happiness."

"So do I, old chap," he added. "You know that. And when I say 'happiness,' you understand what I mean, Luke," he faltered. "Happy as we can make you . . . in the circumstances. . . . Surely Rosanne and I . . ."

"But, my dear old boy," I interrupted, "neither Rosanne nor you can be my valet. You can't come in at seven in the morning and shave me. Neither you nor Rosanne can very well bathe me and dress me every day of my life. Damn it, Mark, I don't want either Rosanne or you . . . er . . . buttoning up my trousers! . . . Rosanne and you are the best friends I've got in the world, the best friends a man can have, but I must have a servant too. I must have someone on whom I can make demands at any

hour of the day or night—in return for cash payment. I don't know how I should get on without Rosanne, of course ; and I shall hate it when I've got to get on without you ; but I simply cannot get on without Yrotavál."

"There's the little matter of gratitude too," I added. "I owe him my life. But for Yrotavál I shouldn't be sitting here at this minute."

Poor old Markie was obviously between the devil and the deep sea—Rosanne's wishes and my needs—and about as comfortable as a herring on a griddle.

"Yes," he agreed, fidgeting like a small boy in the presence of the Headmaster whom he fears won't accept his excuses, "of course you want a valet, old chap. Neither Rosanne nor I would dream of suggesting that you should do without one. But what about letting us find a really first-class man who is a well-trained servant as well as a professional nurse ; a man who would fit in with the rest of the staff and wouldn't cause friction ? You know what's the worst accusation that a butler or cook can bring against any fellow-servant ? They say they 'give trouble'—and as far as I can see, Yrotavál gives trouble to everybody, every day, in every possible way.

"Of course they are a silly, narrow-minded and hide-bound set of half-wits," he hastened to add, "but . . . well . . . there it is. I don't suppose Johnson or Cook or Rosanne's maid would go the length of giving notice—but they give tongue, all right."

"'Here's a stranger, heave half a brick at him,' eh ?" I said, with apparent bitterness.

"Well, you know what servants are. And after all, old Johnson came here as a page-boy in grand-

father's time. Cook used to speak of father as Master John, to the day of his death. And Old Janey used to wash his neck for him when he hadn't done it himself. And Rosanne's really fond of Jeanette."

"And Yrotavál professes to be, eh?" I interrupted. "Look here, Mark. I can see what it is. And I simply am not going to be a disturbing element in the house. I'm not going to that loony-bin, for psychotherapy or psycho-analysis or whatever they call the mumbo-jumbo, but surely you could find some quiet place—some Devonshire farm-house or seaside place—where Yrotavál and I . . ."

"*Shut up!*" growled Mark, coming and standing with his hand on my shoulder, rocking me gently to and fro, and patting me on the back as though I were a child. And although I could not look him straight in the face, but only glance at him as I fixed my gaze just above his head, I saw there was a look of dreadful pain in his eyes.

"Don't talk like that, Luke, he begged after a moment's miserable silence. "There's nothing in the world we wouldn't do. . . . You misunderstood me completely. . . . I . . . My dear chap, we'd sooner. . . ."

I fumbled for his hand and—heard no more about dismissing Yrotavál, damn him.

What bothered me most was the thought of what I was to do about the foul brute when the time came for me to recover my sight. However, that certainly wasn't going to be before the War ended, so there would be plenty of time to cross that bridge when I came to it.

No more war for me! No. Whatever happened,

nothing on this earth would induce me to go back to it. When Peace came, I'd decide what to do about recovering my sight and losing my Yrotavál. Cosy as he was at Courtesy Court, I had no doubt that there were other places where he would enjoy life just as well, or even better—and at a reasonable price. Sufficient unto the day . . .

But it was very annoying to have him constantly grumbling about the way Mark treated him—like a dog, like dirt, like a criminal—and threatening that he'd show him where he got off if he weren't more careful how he insulted a Spanish hidalgo. Who did Mark think he was, anyway? Was this the French Foreign Legion and Mister M. Tulyer a Sergeant-Major or what?

Much of this was both artificial and artful of course—an excuse to demand compensation in the form of a rise in salary—but it was all very annoying and disturbing, for although Yrotavál knew on which side his bread was buttered, he was, like all criminals, a fool. A man wouldn't be a practising criminal if he weren't a fool, and Yrotavál was a criminal all right, and I never knew what form his folly might take when some alleged insult injurious to his Spanish pride filled him with brooding anger and smouldering resentment. To think that such a low ruffian should have anything so fine as pride! I suppose it was really conceit and touchiness rather than true pride, though.

Anyway, I grew to hate him more and more, for Mark's treatment of him had turned him from an expensive luxury into a nuisance, nay an incubus, an absolute Old Man of the Sea, and clamped upon my shoulders apparently for life.

So it was with some fortitude that I bore the bad

news of Mark's intention to return to the Front. Positively the old lunatic was going back to it all; back to the trenches; and as a private soldier again!

I would sooner have been put up against our own park wall and shot, then and there—and that's the simple truth.

§ 2

Yes, all of a sudden our Mark, in the good old Markian way, was delivered of what was doubtless the product of long and painful gestation, one merry morn—an announcement to the effect that he was going to enlist in the ranks of His Majesty's Foot-guards, forthwith or sooner!

I could scarcely believe my ears.

It seemed to me to be something really superhuman that he, having survived the dangers and horrors of that unbelievable and indescribable Legion hell, from which barely one in a hundred returned safe and sound in wind and limb, not to mention mind and soul, should voluntarily return to the trenches, and long before he was fit to do so.

And to go back as a private soldier, when he could have got a commission in any regiment in the British Army! With his fighting record, the *Croix de Guerre* and the *Médaille Militaire*—and General Brent-Grayleigh's recommendation, he could have gone to the Guards as an Ensign or the Life Guards as a Cornet, or whatever they call them.

But to go back to the trenches as a Tommy, when not only were Abernethy and Watson willing to give him a medical certificate of unfitness, but positively anxious to do so . . . well!

I couldn't quite make up my mind as to whether he simply wanted to get killed—though God knows why he should—or whether he had developed a real taste for personal Hun-slaying. Surely he had “done his bit,” to use the vulgarity of the day. And if not, why go back as a private soldier? There again, I couldn't quite make up my mind as to whether it was his excessive modesty, combined with a lack of self-confidence; or whether, at the back of his funny old mind, there was some idea about scourging himself and wearing the metaphorical hair-shirt. And again, God knows why he should want to do that.

However, there it was! Back to the wars he'd go, and with a rifle on his shoulder rather than a sword by his side. Perhaps our Markie, being out to kill, felt that he could do more killing with the .303, for he had turned out to be a really first-class shot, as good with a rifle as he had always been with a twelve-bore.

Rosanne took it very hardly and, had I been in love with her, I should have been quite jealous. As it was, I confess to a slight twinge of—not jealousy, of course, but a sort of feeling of not greatly enjoying quite all the *See the Conquering Hero goes* stuff, while his brother sat by the fire in carpet slippers and black glasses.

It was Mark for the lime-light and Luke for the back seat, for once in a while, with a vengeance.

I was astonished at the way in which Rosanne positively moped after he had gone. I really began to wonder if she were actually in love with him, whether the sisterly love that she had doubtless always felt for him, had changed in nature and intensity.

Not that she was in the slightest degree less loving, kind, and attentive to me, of course. I should be

giving an absolutely false impression if I so much as hinted that. I don't want to give that idea at all, for although his going certainly caused a change in Rosanne, she did not change toward me. No, on the whole, poor old Mark's departure made things none the worse so far as I was concerned, and I lost nothing by his absence. On the contrary, things rather improved, for Yrotavál ceased to grumble and threaten ; Rosanne had less to distract her attention from me ; and Giulia and I had more time together. There, Mark had, with all the goodwill in the world, overdone the " mustn't let him mope ; must take him out of himself and make him cheerful " attitude and treatment a little. A lot in fact—for it had never dawned on him, of course, that three could be an awkward number ; nor that when Giulia was with me, it was a case of two being excellent company. I was only too delighted for him to come and smoke a last pipe with me when she had gone home and Rosanne had said good night ; but at other times, when Giulia and I had settled down for a *tête-à-tête* in the library or my room, he was, at that particular time and place, at any rate, just about one too many.

Of course, neither Giulia nor I ever admitted that we were glad when he went off and enlisted, but undeniably we settled down for our afternoons together with a sense of, what shall I say—privacy and security—which was very pleasant. No, we never admitted it, nor did we even once, when we set off for a drive in her car, say, " Isn't it lovely to be alone together again ! "

Darling Giulia !

Nevertheless, delightful a companion as Giulia was, warm-hearted, responsive, kind and loving as only she

could be, it was not so very long before I began to suffer from a sense of boredom. Definitely I was cribbed, cabined and confined; and though any nerve-trouble with which I may have come home was completely cured, this sort of life was beginning to get on my nerves, and I was really suffering now from sheer *ennui*.

The walls of the paper prison that I had built myself began to look and feel like granite; and at times I wondered whether I could keep my blindness up until the end of the War.

God alone knew how long the war might drag on. What should I do if it went on for years? If that did happen, Conscription was bound to follow, according to General Brent-Grayleigh, and as he was a member of the Army Council or something terribly important at the War Office, he knew what he was talking about.

I was in a quandary; for on the one hand, I couldn't very well recover my sight and hang about in safety and idleness at home, while Mark was at the Front again, fighting in the trenches as a private soldier in a Guards' Battalion; nor could I leave home, go into hiding, and spend my time in dodging the beastly press-gang when Conscription came into force.

And if I partially recovered my sight, so that I could lead a somewhat wider and more spacious life than that of a blind man, I might get hauled before some Medical Board who'd hand me over to their pet fiend whose verdict on draft-dodgers would be final. It would be pretty rotten if Luke Rivers Tuyler of Courtesy Court were pronounced a liar, a fraud and a scrimshanker by some Military Tribunal's eyespecialist.

No, I must stay blind, at any rate for the duration. Better that than exposure and a beastly scandal; and a thousand times better that than the trenches again.

I told myself I was simply getting morbid through not having enough to do. Better go outside and shake myself.

Nevertheless, the Perfect Life was beginning to pall. I was getting tired of doing nothing; getting tired even of Giulia.

Man cannot live by love alone.

Another thing was beginning to worry me, and that was the question of my future. Courtesy Court would be my home as long as Mark lived; and Mark would say, as the Spaniards do (with the slight difference that he would mean it from the bottom of his heart), that everything in his house was mine. That would be all right, and I should have the run of my teeth and everything that I wanted, including pocket-money. But suppose Mark were killed, as was extremely probable? Courtesy Court would then be mine, and that would be all right too—so long as Athene chose to run it as her home. But suppose she married again, a thing she might do any day? She was a very wealthy woman, still extremely attractive, and definitely given to the practice of matrimony. As she had had enumerable husbands (three) and innumerable lovers (three score at least), there was no earthly reason to imagine that she would long remain in what she would not consider a state of single blessedness.

Suppose she married some damned fortune-hunter who got hold of all her money? Or some fellow who would view her expenditure on the upkeep of Courtesy

Court with complete disfavour? Or some chap who had already got a place of his own, and would naturally want her to live there? Or some American officer who would take her back to the States? In short, suppose she made some marriage which put an end to her interest, financial and other, in Courtesy Court? It would be calamity, absolute ruin, especially in view of the fact that there would have been a second lot of death-duties to pay when Mark was killed.

At times—generally about four o'clock in the morning—the future would look anything but rosy, and I would imagine Athene married and gone to America. Rosanne gone with her, or Rosanne married and gone God knew where. Courtesy Court derelict, deserted, uninhabitable. Luke Rivers Tulyer ruined, crushed, penniless, broken.

Crushed and broken? I was that already, mentally and morally speaking. There was no fight left in me at all. I could no more get up and go out and earn my own living now, than I could go back to the trenches. As I think I have made clear, I am a very different man from Mark. If he is a battle-axe, I am a razor; and you can't fell trees with a razor, any more than you can shave chins with a chopper. What Mark will be like if and when he ever comes back, remains to be seen; but I am finished so far as fighting goes—fighting for bread, fighting for my life, apart from any question of fighting Germans.

Thus thought I to myself in the dark small hours when vitality is at its lowest ebb.

Nor, in these black moods, did I see any hope for me in Giulia or Rosanne. Giulia, like myself, had nothing more than pocket-money; and her parents

might live another forty years. Rosanne had plenty of money to spend, but it was Athene's money—which she might never inherit. And apart from my having no particular desire that Rosanne and I should be pensioners on Athene's bounty, there was no telling what might happen to us when Athene married again. Sometimes, before merciful sleep put an end to these miserable fears and anxieties, I actually contemplated marrying Athene myself, which merely goes to show the gloomy depths of horror and depression to which I could sink. And, other things apart, it was rather more than doubtful that Athene would wish to marry a man twenty years younger than herself, a creak who was also her stepson!

I'm not sure whether the Bishops in their wisdom have decided that it is not lawful and right for a man to marry his stepmother, but I am quite sure that Society has, and with the strongest ban of all—ridicule.

No, even if I could go to Athene and say, with a becoming blush,

“Darling, isn't it time you made an honest man of me?” I somehow didn't think I could bring myself to ask Rosanne at breakfast one morning to pass me the toast and become my step-daughter-in-law.

No. Money isn't everything.

It's a damned lot, though!

§ 3

We suffer most from the calamities that never happen to us.

Out of the sky fell the bolt that was to change my life, settle my future, and relieve me of all fears,

doubts, and anxieties concerning it. A bolt from the blue indeed, a cowardly woman-and-child-slaughterer's bomb; and poor Athene was less fortunate than I, for the explosion mangled her so that she died within a few hours.

It was a great shock to me, and I genuinely grieved for her, as must anyone have done who knew her fundamental kindness. I had almost said goodness. Incidentally, why should one not call good anyone whose heart is kind, whose nature is generous, and who is a person of good-will? I cannot pretend that Athene did me any good, but she never wished me any harm. Perhaps nothing in her life became her like the leaving of it, for she died very bravely, thinking of, and for, others; and sending them messages. It is no bad epitaph for any man or woman which says that he or she, dying in great agony, thought of others and gave instructions for their welfare.

Her death was a shock to me. It was a greater shock to Rosanne. Although she had been most filial, she had never really loved her mother, perhaps because Athene had never loved Rosanne—or if she had done so, had given remarkably little evidence of it. One of the things I admired about Rosanne had been her attitude to her mother. Not only did she refrain from criticizing her, but she would never listen to any criticism of her; and now that Athene was dead, Rosanne, while making no pretence of great personal loss, undoubtedly mourned her and grieved for the manner of her death.

Except for pleasant legacies to Mark and myself, Rosanne was her sole heiress.

§ 4

Another anxiety that, having effected lodgment at the back of my mind, steadily grew and pressed forward, was the question of the real truth as to the condition of my eyes. I was using Yrotavál's concoction less and less frequently, and I intended shortly to do without it altogether. What worried me was that, whenever I removed my bandage, I found that my eyes were definitely more inflamed and painful than when I put it on. They were at their best in the mornings and on such days as I relied entirely on the dark glasses and forbore to use the bandage altogether.

Frequently I decided that I would abolish the use of the latter entirely, but no sooner had I done so, than I would realize that the time was not yet, that I still lived dangerously when I could see, even through glass darkly. No one who hasn't tried it would believe how numerous and easy are the pitfalls that await one ; how instinctive it is to do things which it would be impossible to do if one were really blind.

By the use of the bandage, by extreme care with the dark glasses, and by acting hard, consciously, and with the utmost concentration, when my eyes were uncovered, I had avoided suspicion while gaining a reputation for extreme cleverness.

But only while using the bandage did I feel safe.

With my eyes completely covered I could make no mistake. While wearing the dark glasses I was on tenterhooks, though life was of course much pleasanter. While going about with my eyes uncovered, I bore a strain that was almost unendurable, and lived in constant fear. Nevertheless, I had to do it sometimes, for there were occasions when I felt I must, at any cost,

see sunshine, colour, the sky, the grass, the trees, my fellow human-beings, Giulia, Rosanne, the house, inside and out.

Here the pain was, of course, helpful, a constant reminder that while seeing and most thoroughly enjoying what, for some reason, the pious call the lusts of the eye, I was blind. I must do nothing that a totally blind man could not do.

Let me here once again be perfectly honest, frank and truthful, and admit that what I disliked most of all was the disfigurement. At times, my eyes looked simply beastly, and, when this was so, I would bathe them, use an eye-wash, retire to my darkened room and wait till they were less of a disfigurement, were, in fact, quite normal, and no disfigurement at all. This meant complete retirement into my shell for a day or two.

It grew less and less easy to restore them to normality, and my worry and anxiety about them were at length sufficiently strong to make me at last decide on a course which I had long considered, that of visiting an ophthalmic surgeon.

I must not visit Sir Theophilus Grant, for fear Rosanne and Mark should conspire behind my back to bring him to Courtesy Court, and suddenly confront me with him.

I must go incognito to some excellent but less-famous man.

I would go to two, and make assurance doubly sure.

§ 5

Telling Rosanne that I was going up to Town with Yrotavál to do a little shopping, and that I neither

desired nor would tolerate any other company, I contrived to get away without much fuss.

That was one thing about Rosanne. Never did woman argue, nag, thwart, wrangle or reproach less than she did. In point of fact, she sometimes angered me by her complete refusal to quarrel, be it never so mildly, and thus give me an opportunity of justifying myself when I was in the wrong.

She was a dear, and it was a damn shame to bother her.

Mr. Household of Wimpole Street was a most pleasant, kindly, and sympathetic person, and although I do not imagine that Ophthalmic Surgeons do a great deal of bedside work, he had the most perfect bedside manner that I have ever experienced.

He accepted my word for it that I was totally blind, and, when I removed my bandage, he expressed grave concern over the external condition of my eyes, spoke of purulent conjunctivitis and staphylococcic infection.

We had quite a time together, and he gave me a prescription for a nice eye-wash that would cure the conjunctivitis in no time. Gravely he warned me against the use of nitrate of silver, as, although an excellent and soothing disinfectant, it would, in time, stain the eyeball and render yellow and bilious-looking the healthy young clearness of the white of my eye. He was interested to know what had caused my blindness, and was very sympathetic and understanding when I told him of the explosion.

"I thought as much," he said. "There's absolutely nothing to indicate blindness, and had you not told me what you have, I should have said that your sight

was perfect. . . . But I've known of lots of such cases. . . . Terribly sudden. . . .

"Concussion. . . . Sudden severe nervous shock. . . . Occasionally *purely psychological*. . . ."

"No retina spots, no indication of a dead end of the optic nerve," he murmured to himself, or words to that effect, as sadly he sighed and shook his head.

"No sign of disease, Doctor?"

"Absolutely none. The eyes are *not* diseased. Pupils give good light reaction. . . . Nothing wrong with hinder part of optic-nerve system. . . . But we know now that men can be struck blind by shock—and by *mental* shock, too, without any physical concussion. . . . No one but yourself could say that you are not blind. And, equally, no one but yourself could say that you are. But you will have to be careful of this infection. And don't, *don't* bind the eyes up again, whatever you do."

We parted on the best of terms and a three-guinea fee.

So far so good, but while I was about it, I would have another opinion.

Certainly, it was extremely interesting and most reassuring to learn that nobody but I could decide whether I was blind or not: but, on the other hand, nobody but I knew the effect that Yrotavál's filthy concoction was having on my sight; nor how infernally painful it was.

Mr. Struthers of Harley Street proved to be an extremely unpleasant person. Having taken my name (Captain Arthur Holbeach of Willoughby House, Linfield, near Warwick) and asked a number of questions about my eyes and those of my ancestors unto the third

and fourth generation, he thoughtfully screwed up a sheet of paper into a ball, balanced it on his thumb-nail—and suddenly flipped it straight in my face! Mad as a hatter! I was positively alarmed.

Thereafter he examined me much in the way that Mr. Household and the French *Médecin Major* had done, but with a more formidable array of instruments and apparatus.

Throughout this examination he appeared to be possessed of a devil of dumbness, one which, as the expression of his face grew more unpleasant, I would fain have cast out. At length the look on his saturnine visage became definitely sceptical and contemptuous.

When he did speak, he was sarcastic, if not insulting.

“Are you in receipt of any disability pension?” he asked.

“I am not,” said I.

“Oh, I thought perhaps you had been invalided out of the Army by reason of the condition of your eyes, and that you were in enjoyment of partial-disability compensation—and hoped to increase it to a total disability.”

“What you think must inevitably be very interesting,” I replied, “but I didn’t come up to London for the pleasure of hearing it.”

“No? Not to hear what I think about your eyes?”

“That, certainly. But not what you may or may not think about compensation. If you will kindly tell me exactly what is the matter with my eyes, I shall be obliged.”

“I’m afraid I can’t. I thought at first glance it was phlyctenular conjunctivitis due to active-service malnutrition, strain, and some sort of infection. . . . Staphylococcic probably. . . . But it isn’t; and if

you'll excuse me 'thinking' again, I am inclined to think that you know better what is wrong with your eyes than I do. I should say that you are putting something in them, and I would most strongly recommend you to stop doing it."

"I'd be glad if you'd stick to what you actually know," I began.

"Well, I know one thing. You are no more blind than I am. You can see perfectly well. Had you been a pensioner, it would have given me considerable pleasure to have had a chat with my friend, the ophthalmic referee at the Ministry of Pensions. However, as you say you are not . . ."

I rose to go.

"Since, admittedly, you cannot tell me what is wrong with my eyes and appear to be ignorant of the fact that there are eye-diseases of which not every ophthalmic surgeon is aware, I must try elsewhere. I should have gone to Sir Theophilus Grant, perhaps. It may interest him, after he has made his examination, to learn that you are 'perfectly certain' that there is nothing the matter with my eyes, and that I can see as well as you can. It may also interest your eye-specialist colleagues and the general public. It is just possible you may hear more about this."

The man laughed unpleasantly.

"I doubt it," said he. "Good morning. There will be no fee."

"Would it be asking too much of you to beg you to be good enough to conduct me to the door?"

"Far too much. You can see that door-handle as well as I can."

"Perhaps you'd be so kind, then, as to call my man, who is in your waiting-room. Or must I shout?"

"I will ring for your—er—confederate," replied the fellow.

And as, led by Yrotavál, I walked out of the room, he added,

"Next time you try to trick an oculist, don't go straight to a chair that you can't see; don't flinch when he throws a paper-ball at your face; don't, in your blindness, accurately place your hat on a neighbouring table and put your gloves in it.

What a fool I had been—but what a useful lesson!

A damned unpleasant experience, but it again reassured me as to the condition of my eyes. No signs of other than superficial damage caused by Yrotavál's filthy concoction.

§ 6

It gave Rosanne great satisfaction to know that I had been to two Ophthalmic Surgeons; but the news that both found me totally blind and that neither held out any hope, brought the unready tears to her eyes.

She thanked me very sweetly for having done what she had so long wanted me to do, and praised my kindness and consideration in going through the painful fruitless ordeal, just to please her and ease her mind of the constant fear that there might have been any stone left unturned.

IX

WHETHER Rosanne married me out of pity, or because she loved me, or because she loved Courtesy Court and it seemed the obvious thing to do, only Rosanne knew.

Of course she loved me, but I doubt whether she was in love with me in the sense, say, that Giulia was. Perhaps I caught her on the rebound, if I rightly understand the meaning of that remarkable phrase—in other words, asked her to marry me just at the moment when she was feeling particularly lonely, unsettled and depolarized. When I say lonely, I do not mean physically lonely, so to speak. She had my company ; Giulia Brent-Grayleigh had almost lived at the house since I returned ; and there were plenty of visitors and callers.

It was the position of lonely responsibility without actual and established authority, I think, that troubled her. While her mother was alive, Rosanne was the daughter of the house. Now that her mother was dead, she was merely a rich woman living at Courtesy Court, of which the owner was her absent step-brother, who was more than likely never to return.

I suppose that, after Father's death and Mark's inheritance of the place, Athene had been in a somewhat similar position ; but Athene was a very different woman from Rosanne.

Anyhow, after having waited for a reasonable period, and without having shown indecent haste, I now begged her to marry me because I loved her ; because I simply could not contemplate life without her, if she married and went away ; because, apart from that, I simply could not bear the thought of her marrying anyone else ; and finally because Mark would rejoice and would be so much easier in his mind if he knew that I was happily and permanently provided for, and that she would still be mistress of Courtesy Court.

I shall never forget how, when I urged the last point, Rosanne, resting her hands on my shoulders, looked into my eyes, while tears welled into hers.

" You think *that*, Luke ? You really believe that Mark would—what was the word you used—rejoice—if I married you ? "

" I'm certain of it," I said. " Of course he would."

" Yes, of course he would," said Rosanne, " but oh, Luke, how I wish you could look into my eyes as I am looking into yours. . . . No, I'm sorry I said that, dear Luke. . . . But oh, how I wish I knew whether Mark really . . . "

And suddenly it dawned on me that she had been extraordinarily quiet about Mark since he went away. I don't think she had ever initiated a conversation about him. Could it be that Mark . . . ? Of course not. Wouldn't he have said so ? Would he have gone off again, without a word ?

" I didn't want to have to say it—to urge you, Rosanne," said I, putting out my hands to touch her face, " but Mark . . . told me. . . . *This is what he hoped for.*"

And Rosanne, unexpected ever, smiled as she still gazed at me as though she longed to read my thoughts,

longed to see into my soul. She smiled—though it was scarcely a smile of ecstatic joy—and said,

“We mustn’t disappoint Mark, must we?” and kissed me.

On hearing the news, Yrotavál raised his wages.

§ 2

When Giulia heard the news, she went very white.

“Oh, Luke! Luke!” she whispered. “I have been afraid you’d . . .”

“You won’t let it make any difference?” she added.

“To our friendship, Giulia?” I said. “No.”

And Giulia began quietly to weep.

I suppose that being abnormally intuitive and having, like most true artists, a streak of femininity—which is by no means the same as effeminacy—in my character, I understand women as well as most men do, and I was not surprised at Giulia’s attitude. We had loved each other for years.

Now that I had returned to Courtesy Court, blind and helpless (not to mention the fact that I was far too poor to give Giulia Brent-Grayleigh the establishment that she must have), I am perfectly certain that nothing would have induced her to marry me. On the other hand, I am quite certain that her love had increased and that it had changed in kind and nature. I know, without the shadow of a doubt, that, although she loved me more, and more truly, by reason of her deep womanly pity, there was also a sadistic quality in her passion and her love, or perhaps in the passion of her love. She loved being loved by a blind lover,

my Giulia who was half Italian. It was entirely subconscious, of course, and she was fond of reassuring me that she loved me more than ever now, for the simple reason that she felt that I was her child as well as her lover.

Rubbish !

Although no crude statement of fact was ever made, we both clearly understood that I was marrying Rosanne for her money. If this were balm to Giulia, why deny it to her ? If it gave her comfort to lay such flattering unction to her jealous soul, let her take that comfort.

I was thankful that she took the news as well and quietly as she did, for I had been a little anxious. Definitely I did not wish to lose her friendship, her company, her appreciation, her love, and, let me be frank, her admiration. Giulia supplied me with something that I badly needed, something that Rosanne either lacked or withheld. And even more definitely, I did not want trouble, recrimination, possibly the most delicate nuance of something threatening in her attitude. Giulia was a gentlewoman and utterly incapable of anything in the nature of amorist blackmail, but it would have been rather terrible, as well as dangerous to the success of my plans, if she had taken the news badly, flung off in a rage and, inspired by jealousy, had made some unforgivable and unforgettable remark to Rosanne. Happily, her English blood and English training triumphed over her Latin temperament and temper, and she accepted with quite a good grace what she must have foreseen as the inevitable.

And so Rosanne, my fairy-godmother, and I, her Prince Charming, were married, settled down to live

happy ever after, and had been doing so for a time that, to me in my paper prison, had begun to seem quite long, when the War ended and—Mark returned to Courtesy Court.

X

AT first sight of Mark I almost gave myself away. It was on the tip of my tongue to say, "My God! You look . . ."

It was, I think, only the shock that kept me from speaking, and making an appalling slip of the tongue that would have exposed me and been the ultimate tragedy. One talks of being struck dumb with horror. Fortunately I was. And before the words came I remembered.

He really looked simply awful; so terribly changed, gaunt, haggard and wasted; and he looked so—for once I am at a loss for a word—I suppose "haunted" meets the case as well as any of them, but I don't like it. He looked tortured and suffering; though I could see that his pain was far more mental and spiritual than physical; for he was neither wounded nor actually ill, beyond being weary, fine-drawn, and fatigue-poisoned, the sort of thing that rest and treatment would soon have put right if that had been all.

§ 2

It would not be true to say that Mark's coming brought a great deal of sunshine into the house.

For one thing, it upset Rosanne, and in a curious way. Once again I observe that I understand women

as well as most men do, but I was at a loss to decide exactly what was troubling Rosanne; what she was thinking and feeling. She annoyed me rather, but I frankly and freely admit that this may have been because, although she in no way neglected me, she gave so much of her time and attention to Mark, and wanted to nurse him as though he were really ill. Apparently this did not please Mark any more than it did me, for he told her quite plainly that there was nothing wrong with him, that he didn't want to be coddled, and that if she fussed over him he'd clear out again.

Methinks he did protest too much, for he seemed to bear it very bravely when Rosanne came and sat beside him on the settee, leaning up against him with her head on his shoulder, just as she had done any evening for the last ten years.

He had always been terribly fond of her, and yet he was quite brusque and short in his manner now.

"He has met another woman," thought I.

And gradually something of the sort seemed to dawn on Rosanne, for she grew much less demonstrative, suffered a little from pique, and undeniably obliged him in the matter of ceasing to fuss.

But of course women are unaccountable as well as changeable, and there were times when you'd have thought he was a combination of her only child and her first lover. At others, she was cold, distant and short. I got infinite amusement from sitting and watching them.

Once Rosanne put her hand on Mark's, or rather into it. Mark kept his perfectly still. Then Rosanne drew it toward her and old Mark snatched it away. I wished that the light had been better, so that I could have seen Rosanne's face, but she obviously stiffened when he rebuffed her little advance.

"Poor old Mark," smiled I to myself. "*Cherchez la femme!*"

What interested me more, and less pleasantly, was his attitude to Yrotavál. That villain had settled down to a peaceful life of perpetual discord, annoyance of Rosanne, and friction with the staff, all of whom loathed him, except the old scoundrel, Valentine Marmaduke Jermyn, who still looked after the couple of horses that Rosanne kept. He and Yrotavál were birds of a feather.

I imagine that Rosanne had said something to Mark about Yrotavál, for he made a dead set at him without seeming to realize that he thereby also made trouble for me. Never was the old boy more clumsy, tactless and blundering, and he contrived to make things difficult all round and to put everybody in an awkward position, and to make mine most uncomfortable of all. For I, of course, could do nothing with Yrotavál except appeal to the sense of decency which he had never had, and to the better nature which he did not possess.

When I tried to talk to him as master to valet he would grin and say,

"Cut it right out, Bo. Can it. If you ain't sure which of us is boss—I can soon put you wise all right, all right. Sure."

When I told him that it was not only part of his job, but the most important part of it, to avoid giving any offence to Rosanne, he'd eye me coldly and out of one corner of his straight, tight mouth enquire,

"And what's biting that dame now? Say, kid, shall I lie down flat on my back each time I meet her so that she can wipe her feet on me or go for a walk on my empty stomach or something? Or shall I fall

on my face so that she can't think I looked at her. Gee! I . . ."

"That's enough, Yrotavál."

"You've said it, Bo. More than enough."

And he would remark that—talking of enough—he did not think he was getting enough dough to pay for the insults and annoyance handed to him in this dump.

And one day, Mark actually sent for him and told him off—and Mark could do that sort of thing remarkably well when he gave his mind to it. Yrotavál simply blew up. I was really alarmed, and it cost me more, both in conciliation and cash, than I liked.

I had no option but to go for Mark and to put it to him plainly that if my valet were so objectionable, and he and I gave so much trouble, we must go away. I said I was sorry to put it like that. I could not get on without Yrotavál, but at the same time I realized that it was Mark's house and that he was master here. Rosanne, of course, could . . .

A very few words of that sort were enough! Poor old Mark simply went up in the air, or rather, nearly broke down. There were almost tears in his voice, if not in his eyes, as he told me I must not talk like that. He'd do anything in the world rather than give me cause to say such a thing: of course Yrotavál must stay with me; I must never never dream of doing such a thing as contemplating for one moment the possibility of my leaving Courtesy Court: he couldn't say how sorry he was that he had spoken a word against Yrotavál; that I had misunderstood him; and, finally, that he would a thousand times rather leave Courtesy Court himself than that I should have occasion to talk so.

And metaphorically we embraced—and all was well.

Still, it put me in an awkward position.

Rosanne, too. With Mark to back her up in the matter of Yrotavál, she got more difficult, and thereby made Yrotavál more so, keeping the vicious circle going round and round nicely. So much so, that one day, when the brute had been saying what he would do and what he wouldn't do, if Rosanne didn't "lay off" him a bit, I had to take the same line with her as I had done with Mark, and hint that rather than she should suffer the hideous inconvenience of my having a valet whom she did not much like, I would take him out of her way, find some place where he could look after me without troubling her—and then we should both be happy. All three of us, in fact, not to mention the fourth.

And that put Rosanne in a difficult position.

And naturally Yrotavál did not want to leave Courtesy Court, where he was not only in the most perfect clover but in perfect safety. Naturally he did not want to lose his job as the highest paid valet in the world. And although I was a bit anxious and worried, I didn't quite see him doing it. But I knew that if, in a fit of Spanish wrath, stupid irresponsibility and criminal folly, he did one day suddenly walk out in a rage, he'd leave chaos behind him. He'd see that I regretted it as long as I lived.

So between his annoyance and his cupidity he was in a difficult position too.

And of course Mark put himself in an awkward situation by his interference, because he could do simply nothing at all except regret it. Doubtless he had told Rosanne that he would soon squash Yrotavál, tell him where he got off, and threaten to give him the sack and the order of the boot with his heavy foot inside

it. But in point of fact, he could do precisely nothing at all. So long as I stood by Yrotavál, that is, which was just what I had no option but to do.

Poor, dear old Mark ! I hate to say a word against him, for he meant so well though he frequently did so ill. He was all that was kind and considerate, affectionate, loving, brotherly and—boring.

Oh, how tired I got, too, of his eternal nagging at me about fresh doctors and more oculists. I was on tenterhooks lest one day he marched into my room leading Sir Theophilus Grant by the ear and setting him on me before I could put my fists up, in other words, get my bandage round my eyes and refuse to move it. The man Struthers had given me a nasty shock—and a fear of artful oculists.

Constantly he pestered me to come up to Town with him and see another eminent eye-specialist, or if I would not do that, to let him bring one down.

I think he and Rosanne must have put their heads together over that too, for between them they again gave me a bad time and I really began to wonder whether my excuses for refusal were quite convincing. However, all I could say was,

“ As I’ve told you a thousand times, I have had four opinions, two in France and two in London—among them the very best opinion in the world, Renier’s, and they have proved to be right. Now that I have accepted my blindness and am doing my best to bear it and adapt myself to it, why try to unsettle my mind ? It isn’t as though I had cataract or anything that an operation could cure or even improve. You cannot give a man a new optic nerve. . . . I’ll go to another ophthalmic surgeon fast enough when I find that my eyes are in the faintest degree sensitive to

light. Meanwhile, do leave me alone to make the best of it. . . .”

“ We only want to do our best for you, darling,” Rosanne would reply to this sort of tirade.

“ I know, I know, my dear,” I would answer. “ And that is why I try to be patient when you . . . unsettle me, and make life more difficult for me by . . .”

“ Luke, old chap ! ” Mark would break in, “ *don’t*. Don’t talk like that.”

“ I don’t want to,” I would reply. “ And I shan’t, if you will only leave me alone. . . . But when one has got a certain distance along the path of resignation, it’s a bit hard. . . .”

And he’d come over and stand dumb, his hand on my shoulder, gently shaking me.

Poor old Mark. . . .

And one day he suddenly disappeared again ! Took it into his head to clear out, and just vanished. One day he was there, perfectly normal and quiet—and the next he was not. Talk about here to-day and gone to-morrow ! Moreover, he had gone for good—or for what was practically that, since he had re-joined the Foreign Legion. Five years—and no discharge possible.

XI

BUT the really marvellous thing was that he had taken Yrotavál with him !

It took me some time to realize that.

Imagine my joy when I did so !

Free for five years—and almost certainly free for ever ! If Mark had cleared him out because he was a nuisance to Rosanne, and because he guessed that Yrotavál was something of a fly in our domestic ointment, he'd take damn good care that Yrotavál never came back. It wasn't Mark's way to do things by halves, and if he had made up his mind that life at Courtesy Court would go along better without Yrotavál, the place would never see him again.

But when my first feelings of joy subsided, I began to be a little bit worried. Exactly why had he done it—after speaking so apologetically about upsetting me in the matter of Yrotavál ? And how had he induced the fellow to leave his happy haven—not to mention making him join the French Foreign Legion again ?

Eventually I decided that Mark *had* come to the conclusion that it would really, in the long run, be a good thing for me to break away from Yrotavál's influence ; that it was a bad thing to have the Spaniard about me as a constant reminder of the trenches and the cause of my tragedy ; that whatever might be the fancies of my sick mind, a far better valet-nurse than

Yrotavál could be obtained, especially now that the War was over : and, of course, the fact that Rosanne couldn't stand Yrotavál and that he was the cause of constant discord in the general household harmony *had* weighed with him.

And then again, I argued, Yrotavál might have grown heartily sick of the humdrum life of Courtesy Court ; and it was only natural that a man who had lived as he had always done, should crave for excitement, drink, dissipation and violent forms of self-expression.

Anyhow, he had gone. And a damned good riddance !

Not so good, however, when the brute started writing me blackmailing letters ; the implicit threat veiled at first, but growing more and more open as most of the letters remained unanswered, and I sent him but a tithe of what he demanded.

Luckily the threats were veiled, and when Giulia read one of his letters, she could make nothing of it. But I took care that she saw no more—and I lived in a state of constant anxiety.

§ 2

However, save for a certain growing fear as to what Yrotavál might do, my life flowed along smoothly and pleasantly enough at Courtesy Court.

Rosanne was still the perfect nurse, companion and friend ; the perfect mother, I was going to say ; and in the goodness of my heart I allowed her to persuade me to do without a valet, and agreed to let her wait on me hand and foot, be my constant guide and guardian, my attendant and my servant. And when

she had to leave me, there was Giulia ready, willing, and able to take her place at any time and for any length of time.

They arranged a sort of schedule between them so that, except at night, I should never be alone. They relieved each other like sentries, Giulia coming on duty when Rosanne went off, which was usually in the afternoons, so that, on most days, Giulia (who was supposed to read me all my letters) and I could count on having the time between lunch and tea to ourselves.

To some people this way of life must sound ideal, especially for a war-worn warrior back from a period—which, in memory, loomed illimitable—of incredible hardship combined with boredom insupportable.

It sounds, and it was, an almost Paradisial existence. But in my Eden there was the inevitable serpent—that same boredom, a condition that from childhood has always seemed to me to be one of the most unbearable that can afflict a human being, especially one who is intelligent, active-minded, and artistic-souled.

I had everything on earth that a man could want, except what I wanted most, the opportunity to *express* myself in the way my self insistently demands—in painting. I am an artist to my finger-tips. But those finger-tips must be used; for first and foremost I am an artist of the brush. In my blindness I could still play my piano; I could compose my poems; I could write. But what, for my health's sake, for my very salvation, I needed to do was to *paint*—and a blind man may not paint.

Thank God for this typewriter. It gives me something to do with my hands. Thank God for books, but I could only read them, of course, in the privacy of my room and with my door locked.

What I should have done without Giulia, I don't know. Probably have recovered my sight !

With this idea I dallied often and long, but came to no conclusion save that of the desirability of postponement. Some day I must recover my sight, of course. But not yet. I could not put off my protective colouring. I could not emerge, and face life again. I could not sacrifice the sympathy, the constant attention and ever-thoughtful consideration that Rosanne and Giulia lavished upon me. I could not leave my limelitted stage and walk off into the cold dark wings and ordinary every-day existence ; descend from my pedestal ; cease to be the centre of attraction and attention.

And I had an uneasy feeling that, with the going of my blindness, something of Rosanne's love toward me might also go. For I realized in my heart of hearts not only the truth that Pity is akin to Love but that Pity is, far more often than we think, a part of Love. We are prone to love what we pity—the crippled child more than the healthy child ; the wounded relative or friend more than the unwounded one ; the grief-stricken, fate-pursued victim of disaster more than him whose head is neither bloody nor yet bowed.

I am intuitive, and intuition told me that when Rosanne pitied me less, she would love me less.

And interested in myself as I am—as, indeed, all sensible people are interested in themselves—I was intrigued by the fact that, although I did not love Rosanne, or rather was not in love with Rosanne as I was with Giulia, I could not bear the thought of her love for me decreasing or changing.

So indefinitely I postponed the recovery of my sight, and basked in the warmth of the protective loving care

of the two women both of whom lavished now upon me *all* that they had to give.

But oh, how bored I often was !

Oh, how satiated, at times, with Rosanne's kindness and care ; with Giulia's adoration and passion ; with the wearing of that blasted bandage and those accursed glasses ; how worn with the strain of the constant watchfulness against betraying myself when I wore neither of them ; with the circumscription of my life ; and with the narrowness of my orbit.

At times, I was almost mad with the desire to rush out into the open country ; to drive my car at eighty miles an hour ; to follow the hunt in the front rank of the thrusters ; to bring down a brace of rocketing pheasants with a left and right ; to cast a fly ; to see a good play ; and, above all, to paint . . . and to paint . . . and to *paint*. . . .

God ! How hard I earned the laziness and luxury that I enjoyed.

And that damned Yrotavál. I could have murdered him. I grew to dread the sight of his letters, and at times felt sick with the fear that Rosanne might open one of them, and read, in plain black and white, the blackmailing threat of exposure.

From the first, I had insisted that all my letters should be brought straight to me, and had given Johnson strictest orders personally to attend to this. Every letter that came to the house, addressed to me, was to be brought immediately to me. The theory, at first, was that Yrotavál read them to me, a thing he was quite competent to do.

Now, after his departure, the same procedure ob-

tained ; but instead of Yrotavál, Giulia was my amanuensis and secretary. She read all other letters to me and I dictated to her the answers or, in some cases, typed them myself on the machine in the use of which I was supposed to have become even cleverer than the average blind man. In point of fact, I can type quite well with my bandage on.

Yrotavál's letters I, of course, now put aside and read privately, and completely destroyed.

I never fully complied with his demands. Once or twice I wrote to him, flatly refusing to give him more money or to have anything further to do with him, and conveying veiled but quite intelligible references to the Spanish, French and English police. I also made allusion to the weight of Mark's vengeance should I complain to him, and I concluded one letter by stating that I had made to my wife the completest confession of my little deception. I also told him that if he accused me to Mark, my brother would not only refuse to believe a word of it, but would knock his teeth down his lying throat.

Still, I was nervous and anxious.

On the whole, a mixed-grill of a life—as Life is apt to be.

§ 3

I was beginning to take him really seriously and to lose sleep over him, when a letter came from Mark saying that he was very angry and upset to learn that Yrotavál had been worrying me, that it was just like the blackguard to presume on my former kindness, to write begging letters, and to make himself a nuisance ;

that I was to take no notice of them, however, and to put them right out of my mind, for now that he knew about it, he was going to put a little salt on Yrotavál's tail. This was an old expression of Mark's, one that he had always used when he really meant business. He scarcely ever threatened anybody, and when he did, it was nothing more bloodthirsty than a promise to put salt on his tail. But from Mark that meant a lot ; and when he did have to apply salt, it was invariably painful and effectively deterrent.

Undeniably Yrotavál was for it, but this again raised the worrying question in my anxious mind as to whether Yrotavál, in his anger and resentment, might tell Mark the truth about me.

Mark would not believe him, of course, but one knows how rapidly a seed of doubt germinates, sprouts, and grows into a tree of sinister certainty ; and although the innocence of Mark's mind was of the most limpid simplicity, I did not want the seed to be planted there.

Here I took some comfort from the thought that, once the blackmailer has parted with his secret, it is of no further value to him, and the last thing he really wants to do is to fulfil his threats of exposure.

No, I decided, he wouldn't tell Mark. Had he been going to do so, he would have told him already, and there was not the slightest sign or suggestion in Mark's letters that he imagined Yrotavál to be doing anything worse than writing more or less impudent begging letters.

XII

DOES God hate to see us happy? Is it a Law that man must suffer? Can the cranky-minded warped theologists, who pray and rant and groan about original sin and inevitable damnation, be right? Surely not. Surely any sane man, with an intelligence higher than that of a ju-ju-worshipping savage, demands a nobler and a better God than one who says,

“You are born full of original sin. If you sin you shall suffer here and be damned hereafter.”

And yet, even though Mark promised that he was going to squash Yrotavál; even though I was a wealthy man, with every want supplied and every anxiety assuaged; even though I had the perfect home wherein not only my needs and desires but the least of my whims were forestalled and satisfied; even though, with Giulia's loving help and comfort, I could fight my boredom and weather the brain-storms caused by the thwarting and circumscription of my instinct, desire, and urge for self-expression—perfect happiness was withheld and denied.

Yrotavál was still the great trouble. Fear (that Mark and Rosanne might come to know of my deception, and I stand naked and exposed to the cold and cutting wind of their contempt) was its ancillary disease. And now that fear was lulled, even if it had

not gone for ever, there was a new disturbance of the even tenor of my way, a threat and menace of discomfort.

For Rosanne was changing.

Her attitude toward me was growing different. She was not like the same woman. She was less affectionate, less considerate.

Worst of all, she was less sympathetic.

What could it be? Could she suspect that Giulia and I . . .? But no, that was absurd.

Could Yrotavál have written to her? . . . No—what utter rubbish!

All my foolish morbid fancy. What I needed was exercise!

§ 2

And so the days and the weeks and the months went by, not perfectly happily, but with nothing worse to disturb my peace of mind and the beautiful peace of my way of life than this boredom, and idle fears about Rosanne's attitude; occasional berserk fits in which I felt I must paint or die; times when I thought I must burst the tenuous walls of the paper prison in which I had so inescapably immured myself, apparently for life; periods of madness in which I felt that, unless I did so, I should change this dungeon of my own construction for the padded cell of a lunatic asylum; and days of dread and doubt when I received letters from Yrotavál promising dire vengeance upon me if ever again I complained to Mark. In these letters he threatened not only the exposure of my swindle, but referred to

my complicity in the murders of Bjelavitch and Paggallini.

At times, I cheered up and realized that Yrotavál had not spoken, had been faithful to one of the tenets of his faithless tribe—'*Thou shalt not squeal*'; preserving the one gleam of honour that dully shines among such thieves.

An unmitigated scoundrel; an unredeemed criminal; loathsome villain of the deepest dye; a murderer, swindler, robber, traitor and blackmailer—he had not yet betrayed me.

Torture me by blackmail he might, but betray me he would not, surely? Anyhow, so far he had not.

For obviously Mark did not know. And again—thank God for that. Reassuring myself, I would breathe freely once more, and settle down to cope with my only remaining trouble, boredom, those fits of depression increasingly frequent and of depth immeasurable.

And here, once more, let me thank God for Giulia. For when these terrible fits attacked me, she could charm me with her fascination, comfort me with her love, and with the passionate words of her golden voice do for me all that David did for Saul.

§ 3

Well . . . I yawn . . . and I yawn . . . and I yawn. . . .

And there seems nothing more to write in this *apologia pro vita mea*, unless I start to keep a diary. That would be something to do! A form of self-expression and a substitute, however poor and faint

and feeble, for my painting. If I keep it fully and faithfully and try to put colour, feeling, depth, atmosphere, chiaroscuro, into my words, I can perhaps delude myself that such word-painting will, to some extent, assuage my burning desire to express myself on canvas with the brush.

I might even make it a book for publication, and thus attain the fame that is denied to me as a painter. *The Tuyler Papers . . . The Diary of Luke Rivers Tuyler . . .* I would call it *De Profundis, By Luke Rivers Tuyler*, if a greater than I had not already taken that title. What about *Lux e Tenebris* with a translation underneath—*Light out of Darkness*—for the information of the ignorant. Something of that sort.

Yes, something to do. As old Mark is so fond of saying, Occupation is Salvation.

I will write a diary that, on publication, shall be hailed as the Book of the Hour, referred to later as the Book of the Year, and in days to come, recognized as a Classic. The brave patient diary of a blind man who was a thinker, a philosopher. . . .

* * * * *

Oh, God! Oh, God! Oh, God! I am blind! . . .
I am blind! . . . *I am blind!* . . .

Oh, Son of God! Help me! Forgive me! Intercede for me!

Oh, Christ, my Saviour! . . . I am blind . . . I am in eternal darkness. . . . A fearful blackness . . . It suffocates me. . . . Day is Night. *I have gone blind!* I have been *struck* blind!

Oh, God! Help me! Forgive me! Save me! . . . Give me back my sight, oh God.

I am going mad.

Oh, God! Oh, God! I am blind. I am *utterly* blind!

Oh, God! Forgive me and do not punish me thus. It was a harmless deception.

Oh, God! I hurt no one! I injured no one! I was driven to it. How did I know what war would be like?

God, I would not do this to a dog.

Oh, Christ! Pity me! Intercede for me! *I am blind.* I have to feel my way. I can do none of the things that I pretended I could do. *Please* God . . . please. . . . Oh, God! I will devote my life to doing good. I will spend my life in Your praise and honour and glory.

Oh, Christ, I will . . .

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| * | * | * | * | * |
| * | * | * | * | * |
| * | * | * | * | * |

Oh, Rosanne, I am blind. *And you will not believe me.* Was ever man so punished, so caught, so cunningly entrapped?

Oh, God! How *can* You do this to me . . . ?

Rosanne, Rosanne, Rosanne, you discovered that I was not blind. You scourged me for what you called my lying, swindling, filthy hypocrisy and theft. You said I stole you, stole you from my brother—by my lying swindle. When I thought that you were changing, you were suspecting me. Your suspicion grew and you laid traps. Rosanne, how *could* you? . . . And you found me out. . . . You learned that I could see. And you were terrible in your anger and contempt. And now that I *cannot* see, *you will not believe me.*

Rosanne, you shall live most bitterly to regret that you struck me down with your contempt, that you spurned me, that you called me a whining crying child, a weakling, a liar, and a rogue—when I was truly, really, actually *blind*. *Blind*, I tell you . . . *Blind*. . . .

Oh, God! . . .

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| * | * | * | * | * |
| * | * | * | * | * |
| * | * | * | * | * |

That oculist was right. . . . *Shock*. . . .

It *was* shock. *The shock of seeing you, Rosanne, when you came upon us so suddenly.*

Rosanne, how could you *spy* upon me?

I remember him saying that blindness could be caused by mental shock.

And it was you who caused it. You, Rosanne.

I looked up from Guilia's breast and saw you. *And your face was the last thing I ever saw. The last thing I ever shall see.* Your face, a bitter mask of contempt and cruelty and anger.

You, Rosanne! You have struck me blind.

Oh, God! I cannot see.

Rosanne! Rosanne! I cannot see. I am *blind*.
I am blind. . . .

* * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *

And you, Giulia! Now that I am really blind you will have no more help, comfort, salvation for me than your stupid empty vapid,

"But you've been blind for years! And you've always been so brave and clever about it."

* * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *

How noisily those hounds rush through my room. Louder and louder grows the thudding of the feet of the man who hunts with them.

It is a sign. It is a sign. When calamity and death threaten the heir of Courtesy Court he hears them, and as catastrophe approaches, they come more frequently and with greater clamour.

Calamity. . . . Catastrophe. . . . Death. And I am the heir of Courtesy Court.

Oh, God! Forgive me and *help* me.

* * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *

Oh, God! *Did I aim an arrow at the sky?* At You? At Fate? And has it fallen back and struck me through the eyes? I have battled in strength and striven in guile.

That Vision . . . that warning!

" Battle in strength and strive in guile if you must, but beware the arrow that you shoot at the sky! "

Oh, God! You would not punish me thus. Not thus, oh, God! If I mistook . . . forsook . . . denied . . . your warning.

Forgive me, oh, God!

Forgive me and help me.

Intercede for me, oh, Christ, and save me.

Give me back my sight.

Believe me, Rosanne. You *must* believe me. I *am* blind. I *am* blind. I *am* blind. . . . Mark! . . . MARK! . . . MARK! . . .

III

ROSANNE VAN DATEN

I

CAN a woman be in love with two men at the same time, or is it absolutely impossible ?

I know that she can dearly love two men at the same time. I was in love with Mark Caldon Tuyler and I loved his brother Luke Rivers Tuyler.

I fell in love with Mark almost at first sight ; and I loved Luke from the beginning to the end, the very bitter end when he killed my love.

I would have married Mark at any time. I would at any time have given anything for him to have asked me to do so.

Had there been no Mark, I should not only have loved Luke but have been in love with him.

And yet two more different men never existed, in spite of the fact that they were twin brothers ; and, immeasurably different as they were, there never lived two more attractive men from the point of view of the ordinary woman ; never two more lovable.

But they evoked different kinds of love.

I loved Mark—as a man ; for his strength, force and dependability.

I loved Luke—as a child ; for his attractiveness, his weakness, his waywardness and need of protection. There was a great element of mother-love in one's devotion to Luke. Luke made you feel that he needed you, and a woman loves to be needed.

Mark made you feel that when *you* were in need, it was to him that you could turn with absolute certainty.

I rather like finding the right adjective for people, the word that sums them up. There are, of course, a dozen descriptive words for everybody, but there is always a master word, if it is only one that describes their indescribability.

The adjective for Luke was "charming." He was, without exception, by far the most charming person I ever met. It is easy to belittle charm and say that it so often goes with insincerity; but it is not so easy to estimate the amount of real good that a charming person does, merely by being charming. It is no small thing to be given a good conceit of yourself by a pleasing and delightful flatterer, no small thing to be soothed and smoothed when you are irritated and ruffled. The person who habitually and constantly drops lubricating-oil into the machinery of Life does as useful a work for the society in which he moves as does the engineer for the engine that he oils. But don't think that there was anything oily about Luke, or that he was a greasy and ingratiating sycophant or creeper. Nothing would be farther from the truth. Such a person could not possibly be charming, and that is what essentially Luke was; a charming and fascinating boy, youth, and man.

And like so very many charming, easy and delightful people, he had the vices of his virtues, for his best friend—and how much I should love to think I had really been his best friend—could not call him reliable.

You couldn't depend on Luke. But to be quite fair, I don't think this was due to any inherent badness in his character. It was just that he was volatile, effervescent and changeable. His grandmother was

Irish, a Miss Fitzgerald-Rivers, and a favourite remark of his, intended to be roguish, broguish, humorous and exculpatory, was "Oi'm Oirish and onaccountable," when taxed with the disastrous results of some wild and hare-brained escapade. He had a splendidly Irish sense of humour, high courage, dare-devilry, and alas, irresponsibility. And with it all he was so lovable that one loved him for his very faults. And they were numerous enough to secure him a double portion of love.

He was not only one of the most likeable of human beings, but one of the most forgivable. Personally, I found it very easy to forgive him seven times and seventy times and seventy times seven, and to keep on until he committed the unforgivable offence and did what no woman could possibly forgive or forget.

Poor Luke ! So gifted, so clever, so witty and high-spirited, and so insatiably avid of praise and approval. One of the many faults that were, after all, the mere complements of his graces, was his absolute hatred of criticism. Less excusable was his refusal to take blame.

To him it was hurtful, it was unfair criticism, if anything he did should be considered deserving of adverse comment ; hurtful punishment that he should even be deemed worthy of punishment. Approval was the breath of life to him, and only by unstinted uncritical approval could you win and keep his love.

It was a real misfortune for poor Luke that so many people loved him so very much ; and that all around him were those who praised him so highly and with so little discernment.

By all accounts, including his own, his mother spoilt him terribly. That his father did so, I saw with

my own eyes ; and, for Luke's sake, I regretted it. As bad as either of them was Mark, who loved him so devotedly that not only would he have given his life for him, but would have given it cheerfully to have saved him from harm or unhappiness. No one could ever use the word " weak " in connection with Mark. He was not weak where Luke was concerned, but he was devoted to an extent that ended only this side of idolatry.

And the same with all his friends, especially girls, chief of whom was Giulia Brent-Grayleigh, who I should think never once, from early childhood, contradicted or criticized him. He could always be sure of sympathy, approval and adulation from his Giulia.

And Athene, when we came to Courtesy Court, carried on the good work, ably aiding and abetting in his spoiling, if she were not the worst of them all, if, indeed, she did not do him more harm than the rest of them put together.

And this, of course, was all as bad for Luke as it could be. Without it, he would have been conceited and wilful ; rash and headstrong, though weak ; over-eager for approval and praise. With it, the only marvel is that Luke was as lovable and charming as he was. No one should blame him without including his mother, his father, his brother, his step-mother and his Giulia in the indictment, and apportioning the condemnation among them all.

I may be, probably am, what Luke frequently called me, a cocky and conceited little bitch ; but I do think that if I could have arrived earlier on the scene, I could have done him some good. I simply hated to see him so mishandled, so wrongly treated, so cruelly spoilt. It was a sin and a shame. It made me sick,

and I made up my mind, from the very first, that I would not join the ridiculous chorus of praise and adulation that would have turned a stronger head than Luke's. Why, it would have spoilt Mark himself, and that is saying something.

Although I loved him very dearly, or perhaps because I loved him so well, even in Switzerland, before ever we came to Courtesy Court, I determined as soon as I realized what was going on, that I would have no part or lot in it. On the contrary, I would do what I could to counteract it ; do my best to prick the bubble of his conceit whenever I saw it swelling, throw water on the flames of his ardent self-approval ; drop a little acid in the sweet draught of praise that he so greedily swallowed.

It was a thankless task, a distasteful and a difficult one, and if I hadn't loved him so much, I couldn't have done it. It would have been so easy to have joined the choir that eternally hymned his cleverness, gifts, abilities, and achievements, but though I was twelve months younger than he, I was twelve years older, and frequently I felt much more like slapping him for a silly child than kissing and lauding him for a wonderful hero, as Giulia did. Compared with Luke, the school-boy, I was Rosanne, the woman of the world. I had seen and heard so much, travelled so far, and knew such a great deal about Life, that when I came to Courtesy Court and into Luke's orbit, I was a fish coming from the great ocean to a minnow in a tiny pond—monarch of all it surveyed in that puddle.

I loved him and hated his weaknesses, his silliness, conceit and impatience of reproof. He loved me and hated my criticism. Nevertheless, if he went to Giulia for approval he came to me for advice ; and if she was

sweet salve for his abraided self-esteem I was his antiseptic, if stinging, ointment.

And what was Mark's adjective? There are so many, but I think "reliable" is the chief. Whatever else Mark was—ruthless, dominating, compelling, powerful, solid—he was reliable. Charming he was not. I don't think I ever heard anybody use the term in connection with Mark. But he was something better. Valuable and desirable as are the charming people of this world, and great as is the good they do with their lubricating *politesse* and courtesy, the really reliable ones are more useful.

Before all things Mark was dependable, a rock-like, solid, static person. Being solid, he was stolid; and being powerful and compelling and dominating, he was a little—formidable.

I distrust generalities, but I think I am right in saying that greatly as a charming man attracts women, there is something about a formidable, or at any rate potentially formidable, man that attracts them even more, because it intrigues them.

The charming man is not enigmatic and incalculable.

The formidable man generally is, because he may be dangerous; and I should say that, on the whole, the average woman's favourite pursuit and pastime is playing with fire, when she can find any nice fire to play with.

Although no one could call Luke effeminate or in the least degree womanish, there was a good deal of the woman in him. There was nothing of the woman in Mark. He was male and masculine all through. Charming, delightful, lovable, Luke was a mine of faults. The only serious fault one could find in Mark

was his weakness where Luke was concerned. No, I must withdraw that. One simply cannot use the word "weakness" in conjunction with Mark. Let me say folly. The way he spoilt Luke was foolish and stupid and wrong. The way in which he tried to take the blame for all Luke's misdeeds was idiotic, and thoroughly bad for Luke, who needed punishment more than anything.

(But how can I talk like this—I who know how terribly Mark paid, how cruelly and bitterly he suffered for his part in spoiling Luke!) And there again, one must try to apportion the blame justly, for he had been brought up to do it, trained and taught and, in a way, compelled to do it. Although Luke's elder brother by only a few minutes, he was always treated, by both his parents, as though he were ten years older than his twin brother; as though he were in charge of him and responsible for him, when Luke was out of their sight. Generally, when a mother has a favourite child, the father favours another, and the balance is kept even; but in this case, Luke was the favourite of both parents, and so much so that, by comparison, Mark was as nothing in their sight, except as a guide, guardian, and protector for the infant prodigy.

And all the while Mark was worth two of Luke, really lovable as Luke was. It was incredible and simply sickening, the way in which everything that Luke did wrong was Mark's fault, and everything that Luke did right was no credit to Mark.

It was wonderful and rather pathetic to see the way in which Mark accepted the situation. I suppose one does accept that to which one is born, and is inevitably reconciled to the conditions in which one grows up from the cradle.

Luke was cleverer than Mark, no doubt. He was mentally and spiritually a Celt of the brightest type, and was undeniably endowed with the artistic temperament. But, much as I loved Luke, I grew a little tired of temperament. I came greatly to prefer Mark's equanimity, calm and evenness of temper. You may call solidity stolidity, and coolness phlegm and stupidity; but having tried both, give me solidity and stolidity before temper and temperament.

Was I jealous of Luke because Mark loved him better than he loved me? Quite probably. I have been saying a lot about the faults of other people and I should not forget my own—whereof one thing can be said; Luke gave me ample occasion to remember them.

But what I want to do is to give a fair account and clear picture of my two lovers; those two men whom I loved so much, and who both in their so different ways loved me.

II

I WAS born in the Crescent City, to me the loveliest, most intriguing, most attractive town in the world, New Orleans in Louisiana—lovely names, New Orleans, Louisiana—and though I love England, adore Courtesy Court and worship my husband, I am American to the backbone, American to the depths of my soul, and back to New Orleans some day I will go.

I must once again see the Cathedral; Chartres Street and the Napoleon House; the Cabildo; the Calabozo; the old French market; the Ursuline Convent, one of the oldest buildings in America; I must walk again down Pirates Alley from Royal Street to Chartres Street, with little old balconied shops on the right and the garden on the left; Pirates Alley between the Cabildo and the old St. Louis Cathedral. It is so many, many years since I was there that I begin to forget my geography, and mentally, I have lost my bearings. But how it will all come back to me! My heart will almost burst when I return, and show it all to Mark. How I wish I could show it to those Europeans who think that the whole of America is necessarily new, young, stark, crude and materialistic; lacking in history, romance, colour. I would give anything to show all of them an American town with such names as the Spanish Arsenal, the Place d'Armes,

Vieux Carré, Pont d'Alba Building, Madame John's Legacy, St. Anthony's Garden, the Duelling Oaks, the Haunted House of Royal Street, St. Roche's Chapel, Toulouse Street, the Gate of the Two Lions, Fencing-Masters' Houses, Perdito Street. . . .

It is fragrant with the very Spirit of History and Romance.

Did not the Marquis de Lafayette himself stay in New Orleans as a guest of the lovely and glamorous Madame Lalaurie, when the city fêted him at the Cabildo?

And oh, how my baser nature longs at times for some New Orleans food and cooking. Mark smiles when I speak of red beans and coffee. But coffee means something in most people's lives, and there is no coffee in the wide world like that you get in New Orleans. It dyes the cup. There's nothing fainting about it. And if you don't know what 'fainting' means in this connection, it means pale and thin and washy, as you get it in Europe.

No one knows what chicken is who has not tasted it as we cook it. Why, even our eating-houses have such names as Patio Reale, Galatoire's, La Louisiana's, Antoine's. Even our food is romantic. Oh, how I pray they haven't spoilt my lovely city in the years that the locust has eaten.

It gave me quite a heart-flutter to read the other day in a paper sent to me by a dear friend,

"Tattered and beloved old pages from long-ago Spain and France linger in the memory as one walks about the streets of the older part of the city. Shadows still cast their dancing feet upon old pavements, touching little courts and patios and creeping over quaint roofs and through balconies, reminding the visitor of the glamorous

days of romance and chivalry which gave this city its birth and which to this day clothe it with charm. . . ."

But this won't do. . . .

I can just remember my father, and I love his memory. I can just remember the big roomy home we had, the lovely Old Colonial house in which I was born. And I can remember the sick agony of suffering that prostrated me, even as a little child, when he died.

Well . . . he died. And life changed. Mother changed too. I shall never understand how she could have sold our beautiful home and left our lovely city. For what? To live in hotels.

From the time I was a shy, awkward, spindling child until I came to Courtesy Court, I never knew a friendly room. I hardly knew a friendly face.

I'm not going to criticize mother, or say a word against her. I am not lost in admiration of those who pillory their parent in print, and I'll only say that her ideas and tastes, her aims and ambitions, her opinions and her standards all differed from mine, were indeed generally diametrically opposed to mine. She loved living in a world of noise and movement. I hate it. She loved hotels. I loathe them. She seemed absolutely afraid to allow the tiniest growth of root, whereas the one thing for which I yearned was to dig in, to settle, to take root, and there to remain most firmly *planté là*. Oh, how I thanked God when she married a man who owned a historic home, and went there at last to live and settle down. Though even there, poor darling, she did more living than settling.

I don't say that we stayed in every hotel in America and Europe, but I do say that we lived in practically every famous hotel in every famous town in the States,

in Canada, in South America, and in the Capitals of Europe.

What an education I got in those hotels ! Education in Life.

I had almost no schooling at all, though I was occasionally parked at a school when Mother was having a honeymoon ; and I did occasionally have a governess for a brief period, until Mother began to feel that she had been in one place long enough.

" Not move on again, child ? " she would answer my protest. "*Bon Dieu* and Martha Washington ! We've been in this god-forsaken hole ever since we came. Jimminy crickets ! I'm so covered in moss that I smell like a goddam graveyard . . . Cèlestine, start packing."

And next day we would be gone. The Wandering Jew had nothing on us. He was a mildewed stick-in-the-mud compared with the Wandering Gentiles who were Mrs. Athene Van Daten and her daughter Rosanne.

The length of our stay in any particular place depended on the men we met. Particular place, but not very particular men. Mother wasn't blessed with the gift of discrimination.

Oh, God, how I came to hate men ! The brutes, the beasts, that have pulled me into their fat laps, slobbered my face with their cigar-and-alcohol-stinking mouths, called me Momma's Own Cutie and endeavoured to curry favour with me as an approach to her. How many of them, releasing me, rumped, resentful and sick, have said,

" Now what about the biggest box of chocolates they've got on the stand ? And you'll tell Momma what I said about her, eh ? "

And to how many have I replied,

"I don't like chocolates, thank you. And I'll tell Mamma what I think of you."

And therein I spoke the truth. For I was sick of chocolates to the depths of my young stomach, and I did tell Mamma exactly what I thought of the beastly would-be Sugar Daddy.

I hated all men until I met my two boys.

§ 2

It was at Montreux that it all came to an end, and at the Grand Imperial Hotel of that lovely little town that I had my last adventure with one of the beastly, fat, gross bar-flies and lounge-lizards who were my *bêtes-noires*.

On the first floor of the Grand Imperial is a colossal landing from either end of which interminable-seeming corridors run to either end of the building.

Mooning miserably about in this vast corridor waiting for Mamma—I estimate that up till then I had spent quite half my life waiting for Mamma in hotel foyers, lounges and corridors—I was suddenly seized as I passed a big deep settee. I had not noticed the man sitting there, or I should have been more wary; a great fat, hulking brute of the type I call bulgers—stomach, neck, cheeks, eyes.

I had seen him before when sitting in the entrance-hall pretending to read a magazine, and had actually heard him making enquiries of the hotel-clerk about Mamma. He was more hateful-looking than most of his type, and as he pulled me on his lap I stiffened from head to foot, shut my eyes, set my mouth and prepared to be kissed as usual, petted and propitiated and then questioned about Mamma.

But this creature was the worst I had ever encountered, which is saying something, and in a very few moments I was varying my defensive technique and screaming at the top of my voice. I don't think I had ever really screamed before in my life. Just as this loathsome brute, alarmed at the row I was making, was in the act of putting me off his knees, trying to rise, and to get his fat hand over my mouth, two very big boys who had just come up the main staircase looked to see what all the row was about, grasped the situation, and with wild whoops, rushed and grasped my persecutor likewise. It really was an amazingly scientific assault. Hurling themselves at him, they pushed him back on the settee ; each seized a foot, yanked him on to the floor, and began dragging him along the carpet to the stairs. The noise that I had made compared most unfavourably with that emitted by the creature, and was as the squeak of a mouse compared with the roaring of a lion.

Down the stairs the boys bumped him, dragged him across the tiles of the foyer, and would have had him down the steps and out into the road but for the officiousness of the hall-porter, the lounge-waiter, the booking-clerk and other unsporting characters.

There was a terrible row, and when the Manager went with him to the boys' father and lodged a complaint, demanding apology and the infliction of severest punishment, the boys did not improve matters by declaring that it was all true, and worse. " It was a hold-up. They had made Herr Pilsenbrauer put his hands up for half an hour, had frightened him almost to death, so that he, collapsing, had knelt and wept, imploring them for mercy, and had only let him go after relieving him of his wallet, which contained one

hundred thousand francs, and they were going to do it again twice a day so long as Herr Pilsenbrauer remained in the hotel." In short, they were not repentant, much less remorseful and apologetic, and it was quite evident that their father had no control at all over the one who was the ring-leader and spokesman.

I told Mamma all about it. She insisted on my bringing the boys to see her, declared that she had fallen in love with the lively one, and wished to meet their father, to tell him my version of what happened.

Mr. John Tuyler, the father of the two boys, Mark and Luke, was something new to Athene, and I think she really fell in love with him. It is quite possible, for she had an infinite capacity for taking love just as some people have for taking colds.

Anyway, she—no, I won't say—followed him to England. But she did take me to that country very soon after the Tuylers left Switzerland, and she accepted the invitation to visit them at their home.

Meanwhile, I had become a different girl. Actually I had, at last, an interest in life, and life was interesting and worth living; worth living if I could see those two boys again, the boys with whom I had fallen desperately in love during the month that we all spent together at Caux, Jaman and Chateau d'Oex.

One of the really dark days of my life was the day when they left Switzerland. On the platform, seeing them off, I was like a stupid stone image of grief, and when they had gone the image turned into a fountain, for I wept as I had never wept before.

And one of the bright days of my life was the day on

which Mother said she was going to England and that she wished to see the Tuylers again.

Whether Mother had fallen in love with Mr. Tuyler I don't know, but most undoubtedly she fell in love with Courtesy Court at first sight. That, too, was something new to her, a house nearly six hundred years old, in which the same family had lived for centuries. Mellow stone without, and ancient black oak within, set in a park of emerald grass and glorious trees, it was a sample of England at its best. The place had originally been called Tuylerston, the name having been changed after Queen Elizabeth had stayed there on one of her royal progresses ; for, on mounting her horse (the mounting-block is still beside the wide steps leading up to the front entrance), she had remarked to her host,

"We thank you, Master Tuyler. And since you doubtless consider yourself too big a man to desire the bauble of knighthood, we confer a title upon this your house. Let it be known henceforth as Courtesy Court, for we have found great hospitality and fine manners herein."

I believe there is a house in Kent called Satis House because the same Good Queen Bess, on being, perhaps foolishly, asked by her host whether she had found all things to her liking, replied succinctly,

"Satis" (or "Good enough"), the house being known thereafter, and to this day, as Satis House.

Mr. John Tuyler was like the house, aristocratic, a relic of other days, a beautiful anachronism, and falling to decay. He was a most lovable creature, with perfect manners, lofty character, weak will and feeble purpose. It makes one doubt the theory of heredity. Personally, I began to doubt it very strongly indeed

when I knew that Mark and Luke, so virile, active, forceful, so full of life, health, strength, energy and *joie de vivre*, were his sons.

I wish I could have known their mother, who must have been very much younger than their father, and doubtless a woman of much character and beauty.

He died suddenly, soon after the outbreak of the Great War—of anxiety and a broken heart, I believe, because his beloved son, his Luke, his Benjamin, had enlisted in the French Foreign Legion and gone to the Front.

The more I saw of the boys, the more I loved them. Both of them. Mark for his gentle strength and protecting kindness; Luke for his charm, beautiful manners and lively wit.

I have no words to tell how marvellously life changed for me when my mother married their father, and we became one family and settled down to life at Courtesy Court.

It seemed all too good to be true, and I felt that such happiness could not last. It did, however; and, moreover, it promised to improve, as I could look forward to the time when the boys would be at home permanently. This thought sustained me when they went back to school, and Mother, in one of her rare attacks of maternal conscience, decided to send me to school as well, and arrangements were made for me to go with Giulia Brent-Grayleigh, the daughter of very old friends and neighbours of Mr. Tulyer's, a girl of whom I did my damndest not to be jealous.

I think I succeeded better than she did in the matter of conquering jealousy, for she had known the boys from babyhood—had almost grown up with them, in fact—and was as fond of them as I was. It really was

a little hard on her that I should not only appear suddenly on the scene but actually come to live in the house with them. Every time that the visiting Giulia said good-bye and went home, she made me feel that it was I who should be departing rather than she.

She and I never quarrelled. We were excellent friends indeed, but there was always a slight feeling between us, an undefined attitude on Giulia's part of "I was here first," and an unexpressed accusation that I was an interloper.

I liked her father, General Sir Henry Brent-Grayleigh, very much indeed, and her mother not at all. One felt that she was definitely critical of Athene, if not of me, and that she would certainly do nothing to soothe any slight feelings of resentment that Giulia might entertain.

What saved the situation and prevented the slightest manifestation of any discord was the fact that Giulia preferred Luke to Mark, and did not very greatly resent my preferring Mark to Luke.

Thus we were, on the whole, a very happy and harmonious quartette; and I really got on very well with Giulia, who was quite decent to me, especially at school.

III

WHY did I marry Luke Tuyler—when I loved Mark so much? Why *did* I marry Luke? Because I loved him.

And, to be quite honest with myself, partly because I loathed the thought of going away and living somewhere else. I could not bear it. And yet the whole time I knew, though only subconsciously, I suppose, that I loved Mark as much as I loved Luke.

No, that is not the truth. I loved Mark far better, but it was quite obvious that Mark did not love me, or rather, that he was not in love with me. He left me in no doubt on that score.

And I did love Luke. I loved him in spite of the fact that I saw through him; realized that he was the supreme and perfect egoist; knew quite well that all the goods were in the shop window, and that while he dazzled one with his brilliance he did it deliberately; did it as deliberately and intentionally as does a man who switches on the headlights of his car, or as a tradesman who makes elaborate and lavish display to catch the eye of the passer-by—to catch it for his own profit. Luke dazzled me as much as he did the rest of us, but with the difference that I knew that I was being deliberately dazzled, fascinated, and bewitched. He realized that I knew it, and he resented it, for, in a

spate of true self-revelation and confession, he once said to me,

"Rosanne, I believe you are the only person whom I totally fail to deceive; and I believe that is the greater part of your charm and attraction for me. Dear little bitch."

Well, if he went on loving me in spite of the fact that he knew that I saw through him, equally I went on loving him while I did so, even though I knew that he was utterly selfish, self-centred, and unreliable.

Poor Luke! Brilliant, charming, lovable, he was also spoilt, luxurious, deceitful, a little malicious, and rather false.

Can a woman love a man whom she despises? She can and she does. Not that I ever despised Luke until the very end when he showed himself despicable beneath contempt.

And can a man love a woman whom he hates? He can and he does, if only in spasms and flashes. Not that Luke hated me for long; but there were times when his temper flared up; and then, while he was in a rage, he would hate me fiercely and make the curious accusations, far more revealing of himself than of me,

"You don't understand me—and you don't try. You intrigue me deliberately. You think you are an enigma, and you are just a little beast. And I'll tell you this, young Rosanne, I never, *never* forgive anybody who makes a fool of me."

For poor Luke, the keenest and cleverest of malicious wits and practical jokers, loathed being fooled by anybody else, simply could not bear a joke against himself.

And he utterly hated to see anything being done better than he could do it himself, and I don't think it

was in him to take pleasure in another person's triumph. It was he who must have the great success, he who must excel, and for any of the rest to do so was an exhibition of bad taste.

And yet it was utterly impossible, even for me who steeled myself against his fascination, to be angry, or even annoyed, with him for long. One was ashamed to damp the gaiety of his ardent high spirits, to put up a surly defence against his beautifully worded sweet apologies for any offence. In fact, one felt that one simply must fall into line with the rest and give him preferential treatment as a privileged and superior being ; he was so beautiful, his manners were so lovely, he had such endearing ways, and did such charming and delightful things.

And then he would do something that made you ashamed of him and ashamed for him, until he turned the battery of his charm upon you, a long look from his brilliant blue eyes that seemed to glow ; a bewitching smile from his really beautiful mouth, a warm and brotherly hug from his strong arm, and a charming little apology from the depths of the (apparent !) sincerity of his limpid and lucid soul.

He was wont to refer to me as a poker-faced little enigma when I provoked him, but—merciful Heavens !—if ever there were an enigmatic bundle of contradictions it was he. And I suppose this was due very largely to his artistic temperament. For at times, he was essentially the “ cat that walks alone,” dwelling apart in a deep and dark seclusion, while at others, more frequent, he was the ebulliently high-spirited leader in every sort and kind of wild hurroosh of his own invention. For quite long periods, he was the sweetest thing alive, completely irresistible—hard as

I personally struggled to resist him—completely lovable and dear.

And at times, he would have fits of depression when we must all spend ourselves in comforting, cheering and diverting him. Yet, with all his wonderful and genuine charm, he had an amazing power to crush and a dreadful gift for wounding. His wit was like a diamond, it was hard, it sparkled, and it cut.

I never knew anybody whose way pursued a less even tenor, with its terrific bursts of energy and its curious little patches of dull lethargy; its deep and serious engrossment in some such pursuit as painting, music or writing, followed by utter and absolute indifference to any pursuit whatsoever, a lapse into sheerest laziness, when he would join in nothing, was interested in none of us, and dwelt brooding apart, devoid of ambition, unresponsive to challenge, sunk in apathy.

It always worried Mark dreadfully when this fit took his adored Luke. He became most pathetic in his anxiety, his spending of himself; and he would squander all his time in trying to coax Luke out of his dark fit. He was positively maternal, and reminded me of our spaniel Diana, licking her pup, her only child. I believe that had Mark thought it would have done Luke any good, he would, like her, have licked him all over.

It was then that I loved Mark so much more than I did Luke, realized his complete unselfishness, and admired his unfailing, undemanding kindness and the real sterling goodness that lay beneath his self-contained, detached and reticent stolidity.

It was just as well for Luke that Mark was somewhat stolid and apparently thick-skinned, for one of Luke's chief joys was in scoring off him, playing prac-

tical jokes on him, and trying to make a fool of him. In this last he never succeeded, for Mark had an amazing natural dignity. And as for the sells and "sucks" and practical jokes on Mark, the best of any joke was the way Mark himself enjoyed it.

I suppose I could sum it all up by saying that my attitude to Luke was, that while I recognized his faults, I loved him tremendously; loved him *for* his faults; loved the sinner while I hated the sin. I tried to harden my heart against him and I completely failed.

When he suddenly went off to Paris, I was amazed at the awful blank that his going made in my life. When Mark went too, there was more blank than life. I scarcely had any life at all, and crept about like a dead thing. When Mark wrote that they had both enlisted in the French Foreign Legion, I got an actual physical pain. I wish I could say that this pain was romantically in my heart. In point of fact, it was in my stomach; and it made me feel sick for days and weeks. It made me feel horribly ill; and whatever, and however, the boys suffered, I don't think they suffered more than I did. But that is nonsense, of course, for their physical sufferings must have been incredible, whereas once the physical sickness had passed, mine were only mental.

But it was a dreadful time; and on many a night, after I had had a letter, I was unable to sleep at all; on many a day, quite unable to swallow food. For I had enough imagination to know how terrible it must be for Luke. Luke whose nerves were so very close to the surface; Luke who, both literally and metaphorically, was so terribly thin-skinned; so easily offended,

hurt, thrown out of gear ; so hopelessly vulnerable. To think of *Luke* up to his neck in mud and blood and horror ; Luke—who should be painting his pictures, playing his violin and piano, writing his poems and stories—living like a beast, unwashed, unshaved, filthy, devoured by lice ; Luke who felt everything so much more intensely than anyone else, whose senses were so terribly acute. How could he bear it ! And how could Luke, so impulsive, hasty, resentful of criticism, bear army discipline, especially the iron discipline of the French Foreign Legion ?

It was unimaginable.

§ 2

And when, one day, he walked into the house . . . *blind* . . . led by another soldier, a single glance at his face showed me what he had been through. Had his eyes not been bandaged, the sight of his face would have been enough.

My heart stopped and then turned over, and before I could utter a word, I knew that there was nothing on earth I would not do for him, that my life would not be long enough for me to do all that I should yearn to do for him.

And in that moment I loved him with, I think, a perfect love ; perfect because passionless.

That this should have happened to my poor Luke ! To Luke of all people. To Luke who lived through his eyes.

If, that day, he had asked me to marry him, I should have jumped at the chance to do so. I should not have hesitated for one second. Any doubts as to whether I loved him as well as I loved Mark, any doubts

as to whether Luke would not prove a difficult husband, would have been swept away in the rush of feeling, the overwhelming pity that almost deprived me of speech, and of sober reason.

Many and many a time had Athene, eyeing me appraisingly, said,

" Well, you are like me in one thing, my girl—your head will never rule your heart. Still, you are not all heart and no head, like your silly mother, so that's *something* to be thankful for ! "

But when Luke came home blind, so stricken and pitiful, I was all heart and no head, and there was no sacrifice I would not have made for him.

Nor was there, of course, any question of sacrifice. Nothing was too much trouble, strain or tie. It was a pleasure and a joy to do anything and everything that would in the least degree lighten his terrible lot. I even did my best to endure the presence of the horrible man whom he had brought home, or, perhaps, who had brought him home. I tried to share Luke's belief that the man had done him incalculable service, had indeed saved his life. This latter I doubted ; and, as to the services, I felt perfectly certain that, if any, they had been done with a view to the maximum remuneration. It was only intuition on my part, for Luke was somewhat reticent about what had happened from the time the bomb fell on the hospital, but I was quite certain about it, nevertheless.

I had many adjectives for this Yrotavál, the principal one being *reptilian*.

He had the cold, glittering eyes of a snake, the straight, hard, bony mouth of a snake, the look of repellent, lurking, dangerous cruelty and inhumanity, threatening and horrible. A more ophidian face I

never saw on a human being, and I really do not think I should have been surprised if at any time the thin, forked tongue of a snake had come out through those thin hard cruel lips and flickered at me. I hated him on sight, and hated him more and more every time I saw him. Possibly that was why he also hated me, though I have no doubt that the fact that I took charge of Luke and did my utmost to curtail Yrotavál's influence and activities, had as much or more to do with his attitude. I had an instinctive or intuitive feeling that he was bad for Luke; that he had some hold over him, and that I should be doing Luke a service if I could get rid of the man.

I honestly think that I should have felt as I did, even if he had not been insolent to me, as he always was in manner and sometimes in words. At first, I tried to excuse this to some extent on the grounds that he was a rough soldier who was unaccustomed to dealing with decent women, something of a misogynist, and possessing all the soldierly and Spanish pride that forbade him to accept and obey orders from a woman. But it wouldn't do. Had he been an American soldier in like circumstances, he'd have been polite and helpful, respectful and probably chivalrous. This man was utterly hateful, and there was not a soul in the house, save Luke, who did not hate him, and with good reason.

And a thing that really hurt me was Luke's attitude when I spoke to him about Yrotavál's attitude to me, manners to the butler and cook, and conduct to the maids.

However, I realized that Luke, blind and shell-shocked, must not be thwarted in anything, must not be crossed in any way, and if Yrotavál was essential to his comfort, Yrotavál must stay.

So I keyed myself up to endure him.

Well, one cannot live at concert pitch ; and, moreover, we are all so adaptable that in time we grow accustomed to almost anything. I grew accustomed even to Yrotavál. I even grew accustomed to Luke tapping blindly about the house ; and though I didn't pity him less, and although my heart ached for him as poignantly, I gradually came to realise that part of my love for him *was* pity ; and when Mark returned, I allowed the counsels of my head to mingle with the warm promptings of my heart.

For, in his way, Mark was almost as pitiable as Luke, if only because he was so difficult a man to pity, so impossible a man to mother ; and was suffering for, and through, Luke almost as much as Luke himself suffered. My first sight of him shocked me nearly as much as did my first meeting with Luke. He had aged ten years ; and ill, wasted, and nerve-shattered as he was, the sight of his blinded twin-brother was perhaps the worst of all the blows that he had received.

And he was so selfless, so unconcerned with his own condition, that I just ached to nurse him and mother him as I had done Luke. But whereas Luke would take all that one could give, and ask for more, Mark seemed to resent pity, to hate being nursed, and, not irritably like Luke, but somewhat coldly, said that he did not want to be fussed and coddled, and was quite all right, thank you. Both our local doctor and the consultant neurologist whom he brought down from London seemed to think that Mark was in a worse way than Luke, and needed complete rest, nursing, nourishment and relaxation, quite as much as Luke did ; and indeed Luke had made a pretty good recovery, except

of course for his sight, by the time Mark came home discharged from the French Foreign Legion.

Poor Mark! He had never been as articulate as Luke; he had always been quiet, patient and averse from claiming anything, explaining anything, and demanding any sympathy. But now he seemed—not crushed and broken, for nothing could crush or break Mark—but driven in upon himself, irreparably hurt in some way, so that it was almost as though he had grown a protective shell. Try as I might I could not get *at* him; get *close* to him, as I used to be. It wasn't that he was impatient, rude, or even cold. It was more that he was not much interested in me. It was as though a wall of glass separated us.

I had doubly regained Luke in a most terrible way.

I had lost Mark in an almost equally terrible way, and I was surprised at the effect this had on me.

I was glad beyond words that he had come back; glad and thankful and happy. It sounds an amazing statement or confession, but I was happy while Mark was at home, and I did not understand it. Why should I be so happy because he was there, and so hurt because he kept me at arm's length? Perhaps it is an exaggeration to say he kept me at arm's length, but he certainly didn't cast his arms about me to any noticeable extent.

I put it down to his grief and horror at the state in which he had found poor Luke. That was the real internal wound from which he was suffering. What I hoped was that, in time, he would—as I myself had done—become reconciled and accustomed to the blindness of his brother. And although his mind could never become callous and immune, it could grow

resigned. And as Luke receded a little, possibly I might find a place in it.

That is the frank unpalatable truth of how I felt. It was a strange, weird, bizarre time and situation—I loving Luke dearly, and jealous of him; I loving Mark dearly, and hurt and almost angry with him. I loved them both so much. What was to be the end of it?

Mark put an end to it. Quite casually, but with inflexible determination, he just rose up and departed; enlisted in the British Guards and went back to the Front!

It was while he was away that Athene was killed in an air-raid over London. I had never loved her as a daughter should love her mother, but it was a great shock to me and something of a blow.

Luke comforted me wonderfully, and out of the depths of his own darkness and suffering, found room for understanding, a beautiful and winning sympathy.

Rather crushed by these three blows—Luke's blindness, Mark's departure and Athene's death—I turned to Luke. Very hurt by Mark's casualness and lack of response to my love and desire to mother him, I turned the more warmly to Luke, and when he begged me to marry him, I agreed at once. I listened to my head and closed my ears to my heart.

For my head told me that this was wisdom; that I should live always at Courtesy Court (and I could not bear the thought of permanently living anywhere else); that Luke really loved me and that I really loved Luke; that I should be Mark's sister-in-law and that he would not go out of my life; that I should have the joy and privilege of spending the money that Athene had left

me, on keeping my adored Courtesy Court as it should be kept ; and many more things.

My heart told me only one thing—that I was marrying Luke while I loved Mark.

But I couldn't refuse him. I can hear him now.

" Oh, Rosanne, do marry me. . . . Do say you will. . . . Oh, Rosanne, you can't refuse. Rosanne, I shall die, if you don't. . . . Rosanne, you couldn't leave me. You couldn't leave Courtesy Court. . . . My dear, how could I live without you. . . . You do love me a little, don't you, Rosanne—poor blind old Luke ? . . . It would be cruel, after all you've done for me. That gives me a claim on you, you know. You've done so much for me that you must do more, do all. You must look after me always. . . . You must marry me, Rosanne. Do you think I could bear any other woman near me, ever ? I shall go away, Rosanne, if you don't. I shall go away with Yrotavál and live in some wretched lodgings. . . . Answer me, Rosanne. And it would make Mark so happy. He told me he hoped for that more than for anything . . . Say something. Quickly. . . . Rosanne, I shall die. . . . I shall kill myself. . . ."

" Hush . . . hush . . ." said I, stroking his poor head. " I will marry you, Luke. Of course I will."

IV

IN the circumstances I could not and did not expect a honeymoon of perfect rapture and romance. Blessed is she who expecteth little, when she marries a man with whom she is not in love with all her heart and soul and mind and body. I did love Luke, but I had no sooner married him than I knew, beyond a shadow of a doubt, what I had already imagined and suspected—that I loved Mark more and in a wholly different way.

However, I had married Luke—whether out of pitying love or loving pity—and I set myself to make the absolute best of it. I have said that I set myself, and I might almost have said that I set my teeth, to make the best of it, for Luke grew increasingly difficult, and there were two flies in the ointment; two flies which grew and increased till they began to assume the proportions of mammoths.

One was Yrotavál, who, after our wedding, seemed to consider himself even more firmly established as the power behind the throne, to find himself even more deeply embedded in the soil of our very earthly Paradise. The fellow really seemed to be trying to run the house, through Luke, knowing that whatever Luke said “went,” as he expressed it; and knowing, with equal certainty, that whatever Yrotavál said “went” with Luke. Had I not been as tactful as it was possible

for me to be, and really forbearing and long-suffering, our ship would have been wrecked quite early on our matrimonial voyage.

I am not of a suspicious nature, but I could not help a horribly unpleasant and disloyal feeling that Luke had somehow put himself in Yrotavál's power, and had not the strength, honesty, and courage to struggle free ; that he feared Yrotavál more than he loved me ; that he was willing to sacrifice my peace and happiness, not to mention my position and dignity, to Yrotavál's wishes and desires—in fact, instructions. It worried me constantly, and a great deal more than Yrotavál's scarcely-covert insolence did.

It was a most difficult and unpleasant position. Maids who had not been with me long, having taken the place of two footmen and a pantry-boy who had enlisted, all gave notice on account of Yrotavál. Old servants, who had been with the Tuylers for ages, begged me to get Master Luke, as they still called him, to dismiss his nasty, dirty-minded valet, and had to be content with my promise that I would do the best I could. I think that, had not Luke been blind, even they, though with deepest reluctance and regret, would have given notice too.

And the more I tried to make Luke understand how impossible it was to carry on, the more difficult and irritable he got, and the more clearly evident it was to me that Luke could not dismiss Yrotavál if he would, although he pretended that he would not if he could.

The other fly in the ointment was Giulia Brent-Grayleigh. Her attitude toward me now changed in some curious and indefinable way. I honestly and firmly believe that I had never paid Giulia the compli-

ment of being jealous of her, though she had always and obviously been jealous of me, which was perhaps quite natural and to be expected. Now she seemed to do her best to give me cause for jealousy and, though I hate to use the expression, to trade on Luke's blindness. At times, it was almost as though she took a leaf from Yrotavál's book, and behaved as though she too were a power behind the throne, the throne of Luke's unassailable position of Him Who Must be Obeyed, of Him Who Must not be Thwarted in the Slightest Degree.

Had I been really and truly and passionately in love with Luke, it would have been almost unbearable, so possessive was she, so much the interpreter to me of Luke's needs, Luke's character, Luke's personality. She was Giulia, the Indispensable; Giulia, the Only One who really understood him.

That was all very well, and if it pleased Giulia and soothed Luke, it did me no harm; but I did not like it, and still less did I like her growing air of importance, her attempted usurpation of the head nurse's and chief companion's position. Had I not made a fight for it, I should have been an absolute cypher in the house run by Yrotavál and Giulia, the cosmopolitan Spaniard and the Anglo-Italian of whom firmly I forbore to think, '*L'inglese italianato é il diavolo incarnato.*'

But quite a good fight I did make, and the training of the life of self-reliance, self-dependence and self-protection, which I had lived with Athene, stood me in good stead. But my hands were tied behind me by Luke's infirmity. And almost everything that I did to thwart Yrotavál's and Giulia's unwarrantable and increasing interference seemed to be an interference on my own part with Luke's wishes, his quietude, peace

and happiness. I, Luke's wife, in the house of which I was chatelaine, was the disturbing element, the cause of friction, the troublesome Interferer! Heaven knows I did not mind how long Giulia spent with Luke, nor how much she did for him. On the contrary, I was only too thankful that she could interest and amuse him; that she took him for walks or drove him out in her car, read his letters to him, helped him with his correspondence, or played or read books and poetry to him. It never for one moment entered my head to feel the slightest twinge of jealousy. I should have been utterly ashamed, and felt myself beneath the contempt of both Luke and Giulia, had I for one moment entertained one base thought or unworthy suspicion—unworthy of Luke or Giulia, I mean. But any woman likes to feel she is mistress in her own house, and would surely be either superhuman or sub-human if she allowed it to be run by her husband's valet and his girl-friend.

I don't know how to define Giulia's change of attitude to me personally, but I can give a good idea of it by describing it as one of,

"You may be his wife now, but I am still his best friend. It is I who understand him, and if you want to manage him properly, you do it through me. Don't for one moment imagine that this wedding has made the slightest difference between me and Luke."

That sort of thing. A kind of self-assertion which had not been necessary before, but might be necessary now that Luke had raised me up to be his wife. There was a sort of implication that I was very well on the domestic plane, quite useful in the house and for material matters, but that it was she who was his

true companion on the higher mental and spiritual plane, his soul-mate and his One Thing Needful.

All very well; but all very annoying. At times, more than annoying when Luke supported Giulia against me, and moaned something about her being his *Lux e tenebris*. (I suppose it didn't further endear me to Luke when I was moved to murmur, "And my *Nux e vomica*.")

What a wonderful thing it would be if we could always act and speak in the light of the question,

"How will this look and sound to me ten years hence?"

How bitterly I regret that I have not done that.

And added to these wretched little troubles and trials and irritations was my constant anxiety concerning Mark. Daily I opened the paper and scanned the Casualty-list with a sinking heart. Daily I found my heart seeming to stop dead and then sickeningly turn over in my breast, whenever I caught sight of a telegraph-boy or heard a ring at the bell.

And I knew that, had Luke been Mark, I should have cared nothing for what Giulia did, less than nothing for Yrotavál's intolerable conduct and unbearable insolence. But there would have been no Giulia or Yrotavál had Luke been Mark.

§ 2

And at last, November 11th, 1918, arrived and the War was over. Mark was still alive, and the household machinery of Courtesy Court was still groaning and creaking and bumping along in difficult and uncertain

fashion. But it was functioning, and I have no doubt that to any outsider it appeared to be working with the smoothness of a dynamo.

How well I remember, and with what difficulty I could describe, my feelings; for I longed to see Mark, and I almost hoped he would not come. I prayed that he would come straight home, and I feared his coming. For having married Luke and lived with him as his wife, I knew that, although I loved him—I was in love with Mark.

Mark came, and I shall never forget the shock that the sight of him gave me. He looked ten years older still; and it was only by means of a conscious and difficult act of self-control that I avoided making a fool of myself, throwing my arms round his neck, and giving my secret away to both the brothers.

And then began another amazing phase of my life at Courtesy Court. My heart simply sang with happiness. I cared nothing at all about Giulia Brent-Grayleigh's silliness, and as for Yrotavál, I felt I had only to tell Mark of my little troubles for him to sweep them away.

Oh, Mark, Mark! What a tower of strength and harbour of refuge! But what a weather-worn tower and storm-beaten harbour! What a wreck and a ruin of the boy who went to France in 1914!

But much as my heart ached for him, I'm afraid it ached more for myself, when I found how little he really cared about me. He had always been cool and undemonstrative, quiet, reserved and self-controlled. Now he was positively icy. He wasn't unfriendly. On the contrary, he was too perfectly friendly—just pleasantly and kindly friendly. And that was the

trouble. Perfectly friendly without being in the least affectionate, much less loving.

And suddenly, a second time, although the War was over, he simply got up and went ; walked out on us, without a word. I was almost as much amazed as I was hurt, grieved and desolate. I think I should have been almost broken-hearted had not a certain feeling of anger come to my assistance. For a time I was really angry that Mark should behave so. Did I mean nothing to him that he should just go, and without a word of farewell, when I was doing my very best to give him everything that he so sorely needed in the way of care, nursing, rest and sympathy ?

Then such better feelings as I possessed asserted themselves, and I decided that his going was due to sheer inability to bear any longer the sight of Luke fumbling and tapping his way about in his dreadful cramping and crippling darkness.

I realized that he had found it impossible to share poor Luke's maimed, broken and thwarted life ; that the greatness of his devoted love for him now made it impossible for him to be under the same roof with Luke all day and every day. Of course he would have stayed if Luke had needed him, had depended on him, or could have got anything from him that he could not get from me and Giulia. That this was not the case was quite plain, for, unintentionally of course, Luke made it clear that Giulia's company pleased, diverted and soothed him more than Mark's did. (Incidentally, more than mine did either.) It would be abominable to say that Luke was in any way jealous of Mark, or grudged the fact that, here he was, master and owner of Courtesy Court, perfectly sound in wind and limb,

and free to enjoy life in every way and to the full, while the happiness of Luke the Brilliant was wrecked, ruined and destroyed. But at the same time, one could not help seeing what I am quite sure Mark saw, that Luke was not at all forthcoming, was not particularly responsive and grateful for all that Mark tried to do for him, and that he definitely and strongly resented Mark's attempt to put Yrotavál in his place.

And not the least amazing thing about Mark's sudden departure was the fact that he took Yrotavál with him !

As the first pain and resentment wore off, I did once or twice wonder whether Mark had taken this tremendously drastic step simply to rid me of the man. I had complained to Mark about him, told him what a curse and a pest he was, poisoning my happiness with Luke ; and Mark had instantly promised to do something about it. What Mark promises he invariably performs ; and I wondered whether it were possible that, failing in his attempts to make Luke see reason and either dismiss Yrotavál or completely squash him, he had actually left home, his brother and me, for the sole purpose of solving the Yrotavál problem ?

I had, however, to admit that this idea was far-fetched ; and when Mark wrote, I took his letters at their face value and decided that he really had left home because he couldn't stand it any longer ; could not bear the sight of Luke's suffering ; and, moreover, found life at Courtesy Court altogether too boring and humdrum after four years of war.

Anyway, there it was. Mark had gone ; gone for at least five years ; and the strong probability was that I should never see him again—the one bright spot in a blank dark and threatening sky being the fact that, to please me and to help me, he had removed the chief

obstacle to domestic peace and harmony at Courtesy Court.

The more I thought about Mark, and I thought about him a very great deal, the more his conduct puzzled me.

And this in itself was curious, for he had never puzzled me before. He was so straight, so simple and honest, with nothing of the baffling complexities of mind and the enigmatical character of his brother. Why should he rush off again like this, after apparently settling down with no other object or desire than to make Luke's path easy, and devote his life to the amelioration of Luke's tragic condition? Why so suddenly, and without a word of warning? Why without any farewell, either to Luke or to me? Of course, it could not have been simply in order that he could take Yrotavál with him. Obviously not, in view of the fact that he had admitted himself to be completely baffled and thwarted by Luke's attitude, his stout defence of Yrotavál, his strong objection to any interference with the man, and his absolute refusal to consider for one moment any question of dismissing him.

Mark had admitted to me that, in view of Luke's attitude, Yrotavál's position seemed unassailable, and that we simply could not discharge the man, since Luke professed to be so dependent upon him, as well as so grateful to him for past services.

And yet here he was, immediately after that admission, clearing the man out of the house at a moment's notice, and without a word to Luke. It was the puzzle of a lifetime—both for me and for Luke. And although my greatest puzzle, it was not my only one, for Luke himself gave me nearly as much cause for wonder and bewilderment.

In the first place, although he, of course, did not say so, he was undoubtedly glad that Yrotavál had gone. He was almost as glad as I myself was, and the man's departure was like the lifting of a weight from his shoulders and a cloud from his mind. He became more cheerful and light-hearted, and much less irritable. For the first time since he came home I actually heard him whistling and singing. He laughed and joked more, and began to play the piano again.

He also now began to wear his eye-bandage and his black glasses very much less—although, of course, I could not connect this with Yrotavál's departure. But it somehow seemed symbolic of his increased freedom and a new life of cheerfulness and well-being.

Why, I asked myself, should he have been so immovably opposed to Yrotavál's dismissal and now be obviously thankful that he had gone? As I thought of it, an idiotic suspicion which had already entered my mind—to be instantly dismissed—kept returning, the suspicion that Yrotavál had some hold over him, and that Luke, while pretending to like him, really feared him.

§ 3

Meanwhile, Mark wrote to me regularly and to Luke occasionally. This puzzled me at first, for inasmuch as he loved Luke far better than he loved me and, throughout their lives until Luke left the Legion they had been two minds with but a single thought, two hearts that beat as one (to wax poetic), it seemed strange that it should be me to whom Mark wrote so much, and Luke to whom he wrote so little.

I came to the conclusion, however, that this was a

psychological phenomenon, very easy of explanation. Loving Luke wholly and almost solely, as he did, it would give Mark unbearable pain to write to Luke words that Luke would never read: it would be an almost complete inhibition, that and the thought that everything he wrote to his brother must be read to him by a third person.

In saying that he wrote to me very frequently—whenever he had an opportunity, in fact—I don't mean that the letters reached me regularly. It all depended on where he was stationed and what he was doing. Sometimes I got them twice a week, sometimes only one in a month, and then a whole batch delivered by one mail. At times, he would be on a long march, when it was almost impossible to write at all; sometimes he would be, for a while, in a large outpost, a big camp, or a garrison town where there were regular postal facilities; and then, later, there would be times when he was in a distant *poste*, where the tiny garrison was practically besieged, and the sending of letters extremely difficult and irregular.

Mark's letters gave me a curious mixture of delight and pain, filling me with happiness, gratitude, anxiety and a great fear.

Strangely enough, Mark made little reference to Luke's health and progress. Indeed, he scarcely alluded to him at all, until he began to show signs of anxiety as to what Yrotavál, even now, even at that distance, might be doing with regard to Luke. I gathered that Luke had written to Mark complaining of begging-letters which he had received from Yrotavál, and that Mark wanted me to reassure him.

§ 4

And it was soon after this fairly peaceful time that I could not help noticing the effect that Yrotavál's letters undoubtedly were having on Luke. It was quite patent and obvious that he was worried, not to say alarmed, by them, and that their arrival quite upset him.

Sometimes I saw one of the unmistakable envelopes, and knew in advance that its contents would trouble Luke. Sometimes I found him so disturbed that, though I had not seen an Yrotavál letter, I knew perfectly well that he had had one. Their receipt caused him to have fits of extreme depression, varied by irritability and a sort of brooding, smouldering anger. This grew steadily worse and worse, and I could see that Luke was definitely being made ill by them. Had it been in my power to kill Yrotavál, I would have done so gladly.

When writing to Mark, a thing I did with the utmost regularity, spending almost the whole of every Sunday afternoon in what was my favourite task, I told him that he was right in his suspicion, fully described the situation, and spoke of my belief, nay, certainty, that Yrotavál was in some way threatening Luke. Nothing else could have had quite the same effect, for he was not only angry and worried, he was frightened.

Mark replied reassuringly, and with an anger against Yrotavál at least equal to my own. Inasmuch as Mark always said rather less than he meant, and inasmuch as he loved Luke so much more and so much better than I did, I did not doubt that his anger was as much greater than mine as was his love for his twin.

When, in one of his later letters, he assured me that

all trouble from Yrotavál should cease soon and cease finally, I knew that this would be so. Nevertheless, I confess that I did succumb to a temptation which I had long resisted.

One day, going to the big table in the outer hall, on which Johnson sorted and arranged the letters, I saw, among Luke's, an envelope addressed in Yrotavál's spidery and foreign-looking handwriting.

Suddenly I rebelled. Inasmuch as these letters did Luke nothing but harm, and upset him in a way that affected the entire household, why should they be allowed to reach him? They could do no possible good, and they did very great injury. It seemed to me that I was nearly as culpable as Yrotavál himself, in not taking steps to prevent Luke's receiving them. I picked up this particular letter, hurried to my room and, with a shameful sense of doing a mean and dishonest action, opened the envelope and read its contents.

It *was* a threatening letter. It was a blackmailing letter. It demanded not only money but more money, and more frequent sending of more money. And there was a double threat. Not only was Luke to be "exposed" if Yrotavál was not satisfied, but Yrotavál would take the first opportunity of deserting, would make his way to England, would appear suddenly at Courtesy Court, and then Luke would be "for it," as the ruffian expressed it.

My blood boiled and I felt murderous. To write like this to a blind man! And not only a blind man but a benefactor.

Trembling with anger, fear and horror, I at once enclosed the letter, with a scribbled note, in an envelope and directed it to Mark. Although I was under little

illusion that it might increase the speed or safety of its transit, I wrote *Urgent* on the envelope, rang for Johnson, and bade him tell Crayne to take my little car and go at once to London and there register the letter at the General Post Office.

As always, I had turned to Mark for help, and as always, I felt the better for having done so.

More quickly than I could have expected, I got his reply. In this he assured me with the utmost certainty that Luke would never again hear from Yrotavál.

How that was to be achieved I could not imagine, but I could be unutterably grateful to Mark.

Meanwhile the fact remained that Yrotavál had some hold over my husband, knew something about him which put the creature in a position to blackmail him and to fill him with apprehension, anxiety and alarm.

V

SUSPICION is a beastly thing. I loathe suspicious people, and before long I began to hate myself ; for not only was I unable to rid my mind of this ugly thought, but I began to entertain others.

Luke had always been wonderfully clever in his blindness. We had all agreed that he seemed to develop a sixth sense, and to make his fingers almost take the place of his eyes.

With Yrotavál's going, his cleverness had increased to the point of being almost incredible. How, without any help from a valet, did he shave himself so perfectly, knot his tie so accurately, part his hair so exactly, and completely avoid any of those slight appearances of untidiness which inevitably mark the blind ? Never once did he wear a collar that did not match his shirt.

When such thoughts began to come into my mind, I simply could not help noticing that with a blue suit he wore blue socks, and with a grey suit grey ones. That, hitherto, there had never been any evidences of blindness, such as the wearing of black shoes which should have been brown ones, or having any marks or spots on his clothes, I had naturally ascribed to the fact that he had a careful and watchful valet ; but the valet's departure had made not the slightest difference, and that seemed to me a strange thing. I was ashamed of myself for thinking thus, but I could not help it.

One has no control over one's thoughts. One can deal with them as one thinks fit when they enter one's mind, but there is no excluding them.

And one day I got a shock, and I use the word advisedly.

Luke was sitting in a deck-chair under a big cedar in front of the house. I was crossing the lawn toward him to tell him that Giulia had rung up to say that she would not be over to lunch that day.

As I approached him, the clock over the stables struck eleven. Subconsciously, as I thought, he glanced at his wrist-watch, and for the ten-thousandth time I felt a pang as he did so. . . . They were dreadful, those little sudden reminders of his blindness. . . . He then wound the watch, and, just as I was about to call out to him, to my utter amazement he pulled the key with a click, turned the hands and set the watch right. I realized that a blind man might very well, from force of habit, subconsciously "glance" at his watch, might possibly twirl the hands idly round, knowing that the watch face meant nothing to him; but how could he possibly set them at the proper time? A blind man can use a watch by opening the glass and feeling the position of the hands, but no blind man could either tell the time or put a watch right, with the glass cover closed.

I gave him Giulia's message, then looked at the watch. He had set it exactly right.

Feeling slightly sick and faint, and inclined to tremble, I went back into the house and sat down in the hall.

I was mistaken, of course. I was a foul-minded, suspicious, beastly woman.

But it wouldn't do. At lunch the very next morning,

I could not help realizing that he reached out unerringly and helped himself to butter. How could he have known exactly where the butter-dish was, have picked up the knife and taken the quantity he required? I told myself that he must have heard me use the butter-knife and put it down on the dish with a slight click.

I tried again to be angry with myself and to be properly ashamed.

Another thing that I could not help noticing was that when he was wearing nothing over his eyes he was much more accurate and untrammelled than when he was wearing the black glasses, and rather more so when he was wearing the glasses than when he was wearing the bandage. Soon I had to admit that it was patent.

One day, as we were sitting in the lounge, he tapped his pockets and said,

"Damn! Left my cigarette-case upstairs."

Without *arrière pensée*, I said,

"I've got some," and held out my long thin case which I took from the hand-bag that lay beside me on the settee.

"Turks oval; Virgins round," I said, without a thought.

And accurately, without the slightest fumbling, Luke took an oval cigarette, and my hand almost shook as I remembered what for a moment I had forgotten—that he smoked only Turkish cigarettes.

Argue with myself as I might, I could not deny the implication. How could he know exactly where the extended case was? How did he know on which of the two sides were the oval cigarettes? Had he been wearing his bandage, his hand would not have gone

straight to the case. If it had, it would not have gone to the side containing the oval cigarettes. Had it done so, it could not have taken the end one without the slightest hesitation, error or fumbling.

It was simply dreadful.

I could not expel the thought from my mind. It found permanent lodgment and poisoned and darkened it with a spreading stain, as does a cigar-butt dropped into water in a glass bowl.

§ 2

I dallied with the idea of setting a trap which would completely decide the matter if Luke fell into it. And then I shrank from the thought with horror.

Luke was fond of chocolate-creams, rather greedy about them, as a matter of fact. Giulia Brent-Grayleigh brought me from London a box of particularly fine ones, both of us knowing that Luke would eat most of them.

I brought them out after dinner, and offered him the box. He took one, and was disappointed to find that it was hard. Again without any ulterior motive I said,

“ You’ll find that those covered in gilt foil are of the kind you like ; *crème de menthe*.”

Without hesitation, Luke, who was not wearing a bandage or dark glasses, took one of the chocolates wrapped in gilt foil—and continued taking them until those of that particular kind were finished. I almost taxed him with his imposture, then and there, but refrained. It was too dreadful a thing to put into words, and, whether I was right or wrong in my ghastly suspicion, the accusation alone must have caused an

almost permanent breach between us, and irreparable harm would have been done.

But it was too patent, too obvious, to be ignored, and, conquering my scruples and revulsion, I determined to test him deliberately, cunningly set a trap for him, and then have a show-down.

It would be the end of our married life, but better an end of that than a continuation of this hideous suspicion and suspense.

I thought of a number of ways in which I could make him betray himself if he were deliberately shamming blindness—and found it was unthinkable. I hated myself.

And the very next day, after heavy rain, I suggested that we should go for a walk because it had turned sunny, warm, and pleasant, and he had not been out of the house for a day or two. Again, nothing at the moment was further from my thoughts than testing or trapping him ; but Chance or Fate or God had decided to intervene.

We walked down the drive, well-gravelled, well-kept, and though wet, not muddy. We turned out on to a country lane to which none of these encomiums could be applied. It wasn't too bad for walking, but there were numerous shallow depressions in which water still stood. Walking beside me, Luke, who was wearing his dark glasses, avoided every one of them. Unconsciously he stepped round, or over, them.

It was absolutely clear that, looking down, he could see below his glasses. We returned from that walk with his boots no muddier or damper than mine.

That incident settled the matter once and for all, and silenced the voice of my scruples. I deliberately set myself to think of a means of trapping him and

confronting him with the proof of his guilt, the exposure of his horrible swindle.

I thought at first of something dramatic, something that would provide him with a horrible dilemma. Suppose I walked into his study, a glass of water in one hand and one of iodine, carbolic, or some corrosive poison in the other, and said to him,

“ Luke, I solemnly swear that I am going to drink the contents of one of these tumblers. You shall tell me which it is to be.”

If he still feigned blindness and refused to tell me which to drink, I would put the iodine or carbolic or whatever it might be, to my lips and say,

“ I swear I’ll drink this, Luke, unless you prevent me. . . .”

And at that point I abandoned that idea. I realized with horror that I wasn’t certain whether Luke would give way and confess, even to save my life. And then, more than ever, I was ashamed of myself, was filled with horror at my own baseness at thinking such evil. Nevertheless, I felt that I had better drop that scheme altogether.

But I thought of another filthy trick and I played it on him.

Now one thing that Luke had always loathed doing was confessing ignorance of any kind. He hated to admit that there was anything he did not know. In a big book-case in the lounge was a fat old dictionary. Taking it down, I searched for something concerning which it would be extremely improbable that he could answer a question. Turning the pages of the volume, I came on the word *parasceve*.

That would do. The odds were a thousand to one against his being able to tell me anything whatever

about it. Taking the book to the room I called my Glory Hole, I stuck the bottom right-hand corner of the page (on which my word occurred) to the next, so that anyone consulting the book for *parasceve* would have to tear them apart.

That evening at dinner I said casually, though feeling as treacherous as Judas,

"Luke, what does *parasceve* mean?"

Luke looked up sharply from his plate and then, with a superior smile, spoke banteringly; and I knew that he had no idea as to the meaning of the word. So far so good—or so bad.

"Come, my child, you don't mean to tell me you don't know the meaning of that, surely?"

"Well, I shouldn't be asking you, Luke, if I did, should I?"

"Presumably not; but what laziness! What neglect of ingenuity! Surely the context could have told you, couldn't it?"

"Evidently not."

"Well now, you just read it again and see if you can't find out from the context. Then dust your brains, my child, and remember your little Latin and less Greek."

"I never learnt Latin or Greek, Luke."

"No, but you know some odds and ends of French and Italian, don't you? They'll be good enough, failing Latin."

"But you tell me, Luke."

"No. No, I won't. At least, not till to-morrow. See if you can't have thought it out by dinner-time to-morrow, and I will give you a prize."

"And suppose I can't?"

"Then I'll tell you. And I'll give you a slap . . ."

And hastily I changed the subject.

Hurrying down before dinner next evening, I opened the dictionary with trembling fingers. My heart sank, and I felt both ashamed and sick when I found that the book had been consulted, the pages parted, the corner that I had gummed torn, and still adhering to the next page.

At dinner I could scarcely eat. In spite of my certainty that I was right, and my complete conviction that this abomination must be stopped, I felt utterly disgusted with myself, and hated myself for what I was doing.

Suddenly Luke said,

"Well, thought it out?"

"Thought what out?" I pretended.

"*Parasceve*."

"No. You'll have to tell me, Luke."

"Come, come now. What does *para* mean?"

"I don't know. What does it mean?"

"God bless my soul, what an ignorant little know-all! Case of 'She don't know nothing and she knows that wrong,' eh? Ever heard of a parasol? What do you suppose *para* means in that?"

"Well, *against*, I suppose. Against the sun."

"Clever child. But as it happens, that won't help us. What about *parallel*? What do you suppose *para* means there?"

"Oh, I don't know. *Against* again, I suppose. One line lying against another to which it is parallel."

"Wrong, my child, though ingenious. When lines are parallel they don't lie against one another, do they?"

"Well, in the sense of *over against*, *near*, that sort of thing."

How much longer could I keep this up? I was

trembling. The dreadful hypocrisy. . . . The humbug. . . . The wicked false pretences. Getting all that he had got under false pretences. Getting *me* under false . . . No, I must not think of that.

"Ah, that's all right. *Near*. But what is one line to another to which it is parallel?"

"Beside it," I murmured.

"That's it. Now we're getting on. Parallel, lying *beside*. *Parasite*, *beside* the person you hang on to."

God! How could he talk of parasites?

"And so to *parasceve*. *Para*, beside. . . . And *sceve*? You don't know?"

No, and neither did he until he consulted that dictionary and read it with those eyes that I had so pitied and wept over, mourning painfully for their cruel dreadful blindness.

"*Sceve*, my child, is the Greek for *equipment*. So we have *parasceve*—*beside the equipment*. And that was when the Jews sat down and ate their Passover feast. In short, *parasceve*—no pun intended—is the eve before the Jewish Sabbath when the preparations were made for *scarabing*. Know what *scarabing* means? I'm sure you don't, for I've just invented the word. I must send it to the New Oxford Dictionary. *Scarab*, a beetle. *Scarabing*, beetling off."

I began to hate the sound of his voice.

"Doubtless you read the word *parasceve* used by some Bright Young Babe just down from Oxford, as an improvement on the old-fashioned term Good Friday. . . . So there we are—*parasceve*, the Eve of Good Friday. And I must give you that smacking, after dinner."

I got up and left the table, for I was trembling now with anger, and I could bear him no longer.

§ 3

That night I could not sleep, for I was almost beside myself ; sometimes with a sick horror, sometimes with a contemptuous pity, sometimes with bitter anger.

And this last was the worst of all, for I knew that behind it were my thoughts of Mark, and a growing fear, belief, conviction, that Luke had stolen Mark from me ; that, but for my marrying Luke for pity, Mark's brotherly love for me would have turned to lover's love.

I was possessed with an agony of doubt as to whether Mark had not deliberately turned his face away from me in the belief that Luke and I loved each other ; and in the fear that, even if we did not, Luke might love me, and he might stand in Luke's way.

I dared not follow that train of thought. There was grief and horror and anger enough.

And then I would doubt. *Could* I be wrong ? How could I ever bear myself again, if it turned out that I had misjudged him ?

I would go to him, confess what I had done, and humble myself at his feet.

But I *couldn't* be wrong, though I would have given my right hand to have known that I was. . . .

Suddenly I had an idea. He had been to see two oculists in London as well as Renier in Paris.

I would go to London ; go directly after breakfast to-morrow and without telling him my purpose. When I came back I *would* tell him something—something that one of us would never forget—either that he was a swindling, despicable cur to whom I would never willingly speak again, or that I was a vile, suspicious-

minded she-devil who would be rightly served if he refused ever to forgive her.

I hoped it would be the latter, and I promised myself a real and humble abasement. I would be honest with myself and him. I would punish myself by telling him everything, and I would beg him to punish me as he thought fit.

Breakfasting alone next morning, I told Johnson to tell Crayne, the chauffeur, that I should want the car directly after breakfast. He was a reliable man and I was quite sure he would not fail me.

"Crayne," said I, as he opened the door of the car, "you remember taking Mr. Tuyler to town, some months ago, to see an oculist in Harley Street or Wimpole Street, I expect? He went up with his valet. It was before Mr. Mark Tuyler went away."

"Yes, Madam," Crayne replied at once. "Mr. Tuyler visited two of them. One in Harley Street and the other in Wimpole Street."

"And you could find them again?"

"Oh yes, Madam. One was a corner house and the other was 57 or 59. Anyway, I should know it."

"Good. I want to go and see them both, this morning."

"Very good, Madam."

VI

“THIS is one of the two places to which Mr. Tuyler went that day, Madam,” said Crayne, as he opened the door of the car, outside a house in Wimpole Street. I wondered if it were that in which the happy Barrett family had disported itself.

A small silver plate on the door announced in discreet black lettering that Mr. Household lived there. But here I drew a blank. Mr. Household, it appeared, had gone away for his holidays—a Mr. Haynes being his *locum tenens*—and had I made an appointment?

“Drive to the other oculist’s, Crayne,” said I, re-entering the car.

“It is one of these two, Madam; the one on the right, I believe. Yes. That’s it, Madam,” said Crayne as the car stopped at a corner house in Harley Street.

A plate on the front door of this house announced that Mr. Struthers functioned here.

The door being opened by a young lady who was not a maid and was probably a secretary, I asked whether Mr. Struthers were the famous Ophthalmic Surgeon and whether he could spare me a minute, in spite of the fact that I had no appointment.

The girl, replying that this was the house of Mr. Struthers the Consulting Oculist, and that she would

enquire, ushered me into a beautiful Georgian room with an Adams fireplace and ceiling. It would have been all the same to me had it been a prison-cell or a pig-sty.

Some ten minutes later the girl returned, bade me follow her, and led the way to the famous oculist's consulting-room.

From behind a big desk rose a tall, powerful-looking man, with a strong face on which the expression was neither welcoming nor particularly pleasant. Nor was what he said, for he refrained from speech altogether.

"Thank you so much for seeing me, Mr. Struthers. I am most anxious to ask you about my husband."

"Yes? Sit down. What name?"

"Tuyler," said I, spelling it for him.

For a minute or two he consulted a filing cabinet.

"No such name," he said. "Must have gone to somebody else."

Was I to be foiled and defeated again, and thrown back into my slough of doubt and suspicion?

"Is there an oculist living next door to you?" I asked.

"No."

"Then I think my husband must have come here, Mr. Struthers. A tall, fair, soldierly-looking man, rather—er—handsome. He came with his valet, a short, dark man. He's blind and . . ."

"O-h-h! That fellow. Called himself Holbeach; with a foreigner, a South American or something. Carried a white stick, yellow gloves and a bowler hat. Blue suit. Valet had a curious name—Rot . . . something or other."

"Yes. Yes," I agreed.

" Did you come in the same car ? "

" Yes," said I.

He rose and went to the window.

" That's it—that's the car. I watched him get into it. Well ? "

" I came to ask you whether you can tell me how bad his eyes are. Whether you think he's permanently blind."

" Yes, I can, Mrs. . . . What did you say your name was ? His eyes are just as bad as he chooses to make them. As to his being permanently blind, he's not even temporarily blind. He's not blind at all. Never has been. I don't know what his game is, but he's a humbug and a fraud. I'm speaking plainly because you've asked me about him and because I don't like anyone coming here and trying to fool me. . . . You wanted the truth, didn't you ? "

I again had that horrible feeling as though I were about to faint, a physical nausea, as my heart again seemed to stop, flutter, and then threaten to choke me.

" The absolute and complete truth, please, Mr. Struthers."

" Well, there you've got it. I haven't the least idea what his graft is—unless he was lying to me in saying that he neither had a pension nor wanted one."

" No, no, nothing of the sort," I managed to say. " But I have been so anxious."

" Well, you needn't be anxious about his eyes. He can see perfectly well, and the eyes are absolutely healthy. Except for the introduction of some foreign matter they are perfectly normal, and on that I will stake my reputation."

" You couldn't possibly be mistaken, I suppose ? " I begged.

" I could be. But I wasn't, in this case. I have had a good deal of experience of scrimshanking malingerers and pension-thieves during and since the War, and everybody who comes into this room goes through one or two small tests, though they don't know it. I always point to that chair that you are sitting on, placed just where I want it as regards light, and in relation to that table. No blind man could go straight to it.

" And the small table on your right is just convenient for hat and gloves, which are never taken from visitors. My secretary showed your husband in here herself. He went straight to that chair which I indicated, put his hat and gloves on that table and—he is either very stupid and inexperienced or has got careless—he actually flicked a bit of fluff or thread or something from the sleeve of his blue coat.

" Well, as I say, I've dealt with plenty of gentlemen of that sort when I was Referee to the Ministry of Pensions, and while I talked to him I absent-mindedly screwed up a sheet of paper from this scribbling-pad and suddenly flicked it off my thumb—like that—straight in his face.

" He dodged it ; and then must have seen that he had given himself away. However, he stuck to his point, and we went through with it. I examined his eyes most carefully, and, as I expected, found nothing wrong with them. Nothing whatsoever, except what was obviously an artificially induced irritation."

" Are your tests infallible ? Can you be absolutely *certain* that a person is not blind ? " I asked.

" No. No, I don't say that at all . . . In certain

forms of blindness, especially those of psychological origin, there may be not the slightest sign whatsoever that there is anything wrong with the eyes."

"Then how . . . ?" I began.

"From observation of *him*, as well as his eyes. He gave himself away most obviously, and his eyes confirmed it . . . I can tell whether a man is blind or not, the moment he comes into this room. It's a look on the face, as well as the whole bearing . . . carriage . . . manner. No man can go blind and stay blind, without it showing in the expression of his face. And that alone is enough for me. Why, if a thousand men opened that door and came to this desk, and nine hundred and ninety-nine of them were blind, I'd spot the one who wasn't. Every time. I knew your husband was not blind before ever he proved it to me by what he did; and before ever I examined his eyes.

"And I'll tell you another thing, Mrs.—er—Tuyler. The valet, if that's what he is, also knows your husband isn't blind; for I watched carefully—and I suppose one developed a special faculty while working at the Ministry of Pensions. When I rang for the man, he made no attempt to give your husband his hat and gloves, which I had moved to my desk when I examined his eyes. No, your husband took them himself and marched out of the room in high dudgeon. And the attendant or valet or whatever he is, didn't open the door of the car. Your husband did that himself . . . A very clumsy impostor indeed."

"Mr. Struthers," I said, "it would be a most terrible thing if you were mistaken . . . If a blind man were called an *impostor* and . . ."

The oculist rose to his feet.

"My dear Madam," he said with an air of finality,

"I am *not* mistaken. It is absolutely impossible that I should be mistaken in this particular case. If you are under any misapprehension still, why not go and test him yourself. Simplest thing in the world, for of all the impostors whom I have convicted of pretended blindness to avoid enlistment, to avoid returning to the Front, or to get a pension, your husband is the crudest and feeblest. I never saw poorer acting or greater carelessness. I might say stupidity. And if it was a joke—it was a poor one. . . ."

I thanked Mr. Struthers. For, after all, if he had not been particularly pleasant and polite, he had been honest. I also asked him if I might leave a fee.

"Well, I refused one from your husband, for I was feeling more than a little angry and contemptuous. I will accept it now. Three guineas . . . Thank you. And you can take it from me, without the slightest hesitation or shadow of a doubt, that your husband can see as well as you or I can," said the offended Mr. Struthers.

§ 2

My state of mind as I drove home amazed me. I had quite finally accepted the evidence of my own senses coupled with the oculist's assurance, and had ceased to resist admission of the fact that Luke was an impostor, a swindler, and a thief. Yes, a thief certainly, who had stolen much from me, if not the best and greatest thing in life.

I could not be absolutely certain that, but for his vile deceit and trickery, I should be married to Mark, but I now felt intuitively—and like most women I put intuition far before reasoning and argument—

that Mark loved me, and would have asked me to marry him but for Luke's blindness and helplessness.

I ought to have been seething with indignation and fierce anger. But I was not. To my surprise, there was a glimmer of gladness in the dark turmoil of my thoughts, like a faint watery beam of sunshine breaking through massed clouds upon a black and heavy sea.

What was it? Why, now that I knew for certain, did I not feel more hurt, contemptuous, bitter, and angry?

Striving to be honest with myself, and to feel nothing merely because I *ought* to feel it, I decided that it was because I was now, in some indefinable way, nearer to Mark.

Certainly I was further from Luke. As far from Luke as I could be, for never, never again should I regard him as my husband.

It was idiotic and foolish to admit this little gleam of light and happiness, but there it was. Luke had married me under false pretences; and the fact of those same false pretences, discovered and exposed, now divorced me from him—in all but Law. It set me free. Idiotic again—to toy with that '*all but Law.*' As well say '*all but everything.*'

But would it appeal thus to Mark?

Mark was apt to be a law unto himself; and when he knew that Luke was a lying, fraudulent rogue, a contemptible impostor who had thus come between himself and me, what would Mark care about any five-cent Law? If Mark loved me, as I somehow felt that he did, and I told him that I had only married Luke out of pity, to try to compensate him, in however

slight degree, for all that he had lost, what would be Mark's instant reaction when he found that I loved him?

Into what amazing by-ways one's mind can wander when the subconscious part of it is dominant. . . .

Why should I think that Mark loved me?

Why should I think that he took Yrotavál away, just to help me? Why should I think that Mark loved me in the sense of being in love with me? The wish was father to the thought, of course.

Nevertheless, if he did love me, I was free . . . free . . . When I told him that Luke . . .

And suddenly I came to life, emerged from the dull stupidity of my brown study, the conscious thinking part of my mind very much under control.

When I told Mark of Luke's horrible imposture!

How could I do such a thing? It would be absolutely devilish. It would do poor Mark irreparable harm. He would never have a grain of faith in man or woman again, as long as he lived. Not a grain of faith the size of a mustard-seed. He absolutely worshipped his twin-brother. Adored him. He had devotedly loved him from babyhood; loved him far better than ever he had loved, or would love, me.

Of course, I couldn't tell Mark. I should be ashamed of myself, and he'd be ashamed of me for doing it; more angry with me than he'd be with Luke.

Luke must recover his sight.

Of course Luke must recover his sight. Mark must

be told the joyful news and he must not know that Luke had never lost it.

I would tell Luke that I had discovered his vile secret, tell him how I had first suspected him, and had then trapped him, in an honest attempt to prove or disprove the truth of my suspicion; and that I had been to see the oculist—who, incidentally, I was pretty sure had given Luke short shrift and the rough side of his tongue.

And then? Why, then—Luke and I would continue to live at Courtesy Court in peace and amity, of a sort. He could take up his permanent abode in his own room of which he was so fond, and in which, anyway, he now spent many more nights than he did in our own bedroom. And Mark, returning from the French Foreign Legion, would find that Luke had recovered his sight completely.

(When he returned! What were the chances that he would survive more years of war and such a life as that of the French Foreign Legion on active service?)

But still the little ray of hope—no, not hope—the ray of light, persisted; for I was free.

I should never be Mark's wife, but neither again would I be Luke's.

What would Mark's attitude really be, if he ever knew?

Forgiveness, in the end, I verily believed. I did not think it was in Mark's nature to be angry with Luke for long; much less to hate him. Could I rise to Mark's heights of love and forgiveness? Perfect understanding, perfect comprehension that, understanding all, forgives all? No, I couldn't. In the

first place, I was a woman, and a woman in love : in the second place, I was not Luke's twin.

What line would Luke take when I told him that I had found him out ?

And should I, remembering Mark, speak to Luke gently, tell him I quite understood how War, lovely ennobling War, could have changed him so ? That I completely forgave him for any wrong that he had done to me ; but that he must clearly understand that, as the grounds of our marriage had been his blindness and his need, and those grounds been proved to be illusory, the marriage was as much a fraud as his blindness and, like it, must now end.

But what ever should I do if he flew into a temper ; or struck an attitude of outraged innocence, and stoutly denied that he could see ? I decided that I would give him the choice of dropping that line of conduct or of dropping me. I somehow felt that if it came to a choice between the truth and the retention of his creature comforts on the one hand, and clinging to this imposture and losing me and my money on the other . . .

Oh, horrible thought ! Had he married me for my money ?

No, no, no ! What a beastly and unworthy thought. I was getting as bad as . . . Oh, God, give me a little help !

I was thankful to find that the car was turning in through the gates of Courtesy Court park.

I do not remember a single detail of that drive save my thoughts—to call that turmoil of impulses, hopes, fears and unwelcome intrusions of the subconscious mind, by the name of thoughts.

§ 3

I must see Luke at once, see him and get this dreadful business straightened out ; and come to an understanding one way or the other. He must make confession or denial ; and then I must act accordingly.

I glanced at the ancient grandfather-clock in the hall. I'd go straight and see him before I thought of food. I would not stop for so much as a cup of tea. But he'd be sleeping. The afternoon was sacred to his rest, as he slept so badly at night, since to him night and day were one. (Oh, Luke ! How could you be such a lying, fraudulent faker !) When Giulia was at the house she would generally go up and read or play to him for an hour after lunch, before he went to bed.

Well, Giulia wasn't here to-day.

And Luke wasn't blind.

It would take some time to realize that and keep it permanently in mind.

I would go up to his room and, if he were asleep, I'd wake him, and with what is known as a rude awakening.

No, I must try not to get angry, bitter or contemptuous.

The last thing in the world that I wanted, or felt that I could bear, was a row, a squabble, a 'vulgar altercation.'

I must be wise and cool and careful, for Luke was so much cleverer than I, and so plausible.

Should I wait a while, until I was really calm and collected ?

No. It would be dreadful. This was a thing to do at once, or never.

Telling the parlour-maid that I would have nothing

until tea-time, I went straight upstairs, and along to Luke's room.

Nerving myself to say what must be said, and schooling myself to say it quietly, with dignity and without rancour, I opened the door.

Luke and Giulia ! . . . Lovers ! . . .

Unintentionally I had made no sound. I had stood for a few seconds preparing myself, and had opened the door swiftly and silently.

I could not believe my eyes.

Luke . . . Giulia . . . I was speechless. I doubted the evidence of my own eyes. I was incredulous and numbed.

Giulia, my friend whom I had trusted absolutely, as a nurse, as a member of the family, and of whom I had never thought the slightest evil.

Luke, to whom I had given everything, for whom I had done everything. Luke, whom I had married . . . while Mark . . .

Suddenly he looked up ; his eyes met mine ; and, literally and physically, he flinched ; the healthy colour drained from his face as he stared.

He saw me as clearly as ever any human being saw anything at all.

"Rosanne !" he whispered, then clapped his hands to his eyes and cried something inarticulately.

Giulia raised her head in alarm, looked round, saw me, and flushed darkly.

I turned and went from the room without a word.

VII

AM I different from other women, or quite normal ? I went down to the hall, seated myself in my own chair and wondered at myself.

For I was not stricken with disgust, contempt, anger, fierce resentment, or any of the feelings presumably proper to the situation. I was still numbed, of course, my feelings dulled ; but, such as it was, my strongest emotion was one of amazement. Not at what I had seen ; not that Giulia should be the thing she was ; not that Luke should have made such return for my kindness and my sacrifice ; but because the little ray of light was growing, quickly growing, to a beam, a beam of sunshine.

For surely I was now really free, free in every sense of the word ; could soon be free even within the meaning of an archaic and hide-bound Law. Surely what Luke had done, first by shamefully swindling me and then by being unfaithful, was enough, even in England ? Besides, if it were not, Luke would prefer divorce to exposure. If the wonderful and sensible Law decreed that he must treat me with cruelty as well as infidelity, he would undoubtedly agree to the necessary collusion, even though his halo were still further dimmed.

And then darkness gathered in again.

I could not, and I would not, let Mark know of this.

Certainly not about the blindness, for he had played that trick on Mark himself, as well as on me.

Certainly not the other, with cruelty included, for that would outrage Mark's sense of decency and honour more deeply than the blindness. Oh, what could . . . ?

Suddenly Giulia appeared, and passed through the hall on her way to the front door.

I stood up and she saw me. She looked more beautiful than ever, but—she was frightened.

"Don't come again please, Giulia," I said very quietly.

"It's *me* he loves!" she cried. "He has always loved me. He loved me before ever he set eyes on you. And I love him. I love him. I have always loved him . . ."

And then the real Giulia shone forth.

"And he married *you* for your money," she almost shouted.

"Yes, Giulia, I begin to think he did. Good-bye."

"What are you going to do about it?"

"I don't know yet, Giulia. Good-bye."

I put out my hand toward the bell, and Giulia went, with some attempt at dignity.

§ 2

As Giulia had asked—*What was I going to do about it?*
And as I had told Giulia, I did not know.

I must have sat in that chair for hours, staring straight before me, seeing nothing—nothing concrete, that is to say, for I saw other things all too clearly—and, in a stunned and stupid way, wondering what I was going to do.

Johnson must have brought tea, for I was aware that, with gentle reproach, he was asking me if he

should make me what he called 'a fresh pot.' I remember shaking my head and being amazed that, shortly after, as it seemed, he came and announced that dinner was ready.

What was he saying? The parlour-maid could get no answer from Mr. Luke. He himself had been to Mr. Luke's room and had knocked at the door and been told to go away.

Appearances must be maintained, and it is the little familiar acts and routine habits of life that tide us over crises, and are our best helps in our times of greatest trouble.

Luke did not appear, and I went through dinner alone. As soon as I could, I went into the drawing-room and again sat and stared blankly at the future.

What was I going to do about it?

What was I going to do about Luke's living lie, imposture and deceit? What was I going to do about his shameful and shameless infidelity?

One thing, with regard to him and Giulia, I was not going to do, and that was work up the appropriate feelings if they did not come of themselves. I was not going to be the vindictive outraged wife—until I felt vindictive. I was not going to act in a wild whirl of angry determination to have my revenge and my rights—until I felt revengeful and desirous of my rights. I was not going to send instantly for my solicitor and tell him to begin divorce proceedings forthwith.

I would be absolutely honest with myself and would feel what I did feel and not what I ought to feel. . . . And I must discriminate. I must separate what I felt about Luke's deceit and cheating in the matter of his false blindness, from what I felt about his treachery and unfaithfulness to our marriage.

I think I am fairly clear-minded, logical and capable of honest thought and self-examination. Anyway, as I sat there alone in the silence, I decided that my love for Luke was completely dead, that I could never forgive him for what he had done to Mark and to me by shamming blindness.

I also came to the conclusion—which surprised me—that, with regard to him and Giulia, I was much more hurt, shocked, and amazed than I was indignant, angry and vengeful.

It was a terrible thing, of course, but the blow of this discovery was, compared with that of the blindness, but slight. I wondered whether this was because it came just after the other, at a moment when I had rather exhausted my ability to feel and to suffer. I also wondered whether it was because it was not a thing that hurt and wronged Mark as the blindness imposture had.

I decided that in simple truth it was because, horrible as it was, it set me free—from the position of being married to one man while I loved another. I realized that it set me free . . . in relation to Mark. And though I hated myself for it, I knew that, mingled with disgust, horror and sense of shocked injury and hurt, was a slight if incredible feeling of gladness. This being so, I could not and would not take a high and mighty line of outraged indignation in dealing with Luke. It was not for me to show moral superiority and pharisaical contempt of an act of which I was *almost* glad, and by which my life might perhaps be made happier.

So—what was I going to do about it?

One thing I was not going to do was ever again to live with Luke as his wife. That knowledge and

certainly gave me comfort, a sense of something valuable saved from the wreck and ruin of my life.

My life! Suppose I put consideration of that aside, at any rate for the present, and thought of Mark's life.

And Luke's.

That was certainly what Mark himself would have done in the same circumstances, and I had not lived in the same house with Mark for all those years without consciously, or unconsciously, being influenced by his standards and example. Mark's rare angers and fits of indignant wrath were invariably on behalf of other people. When he was enraged against someone, it was for someone else. What would Mark do? What should I do, if I tried to be a female Mark?

First of all, forgiveness to the extent that that was possible; secondly, a general minimizing of trouble and an honest attempt to make the best of things. Luke being the culprit, Mark would forgive him altogether. In this case, he would make him recover his eyesight as gradually or as quickly as he chose; and if he believed that Luke really, truly, and finally loved Giulia, he'd do anything in his power to enable him to marry her.

Well, I'd do that. I'd tell him I knew he was not blind and that he must cease to pretend to be: and I'd ask him if he wished to marry Giulia, and I'd give him a divorce if he wanted one.

Divorce him and publicly disgrace him, against his will, I would not; but how I hoped and prayed that he would ask me to give him his freedom.

But I had better sleep on it, for I must take no hasty step, and there was much to be considered. Finance,

for one thing, if the impecunious Luke were to marry the penniless Giulia.

But on one point my mind was crystal clear, and on another, hard as adamant: clear that I must show forgiveness for what Luke had done—and understanding of his temperament and his temptations, understanding that such a man as he could have high courage and great *élan*, and yet lack the grit and backbone to hold on: understanding that such a man as he must inevitably and always be the prey of the Giulias of this world. For who shall escape his temperament?

On that I was absolutely clear.

And on the other I was hard—hard and strong on the point of an irrevocable refusal ever to return to him. There I would be firm. Surely Mark would agree to that?

As though I were Mark himself, I would go to Luke now, speak to him with real kindness and without recrimination. Just tell him simply and plainly that he must stop pretending to be blind, and that if he wanted his Giulia he should have her.

Yes, I thought bitterly, and that would be in the true tradition of the proper attitude of all his relations and friends to the great Luke.

I rose to my feet, thankful to find that I was no longer trembling. Was there in my heart any glow of self-satisfaction and self-righteousness that I had been able to attain this Mark-like attitude to the man who had wronged me so? Not the slightest, for, being honest with myself, I knew that as surely as I said,

“I forgive you and will let you have your Giulia,” there followed, though unspoken by myself to me, the words,

“And I shall then be free—as Mark is free.”

VIII

I STOOD for a moment outside the closed door of Luke's room, trying to arrange my thoughts and to decide what I should say, for I was desperately anxious to say the right thing, and in the right words. It was always very necessary to say the right thing in the right words to Luke when he was in trouble ; and if ever a man were in trouble, poor Luke was now. For him, the worst conceivable trouble—being in the wrong and without excuse ; desperately in the wrong and utterly without defence of any sort.

That alone would torture him, apart from any definite punishment that would follow his wrongdoing.

Now to be conciliatory, understanding and honestly friendly. Now to try to act as though I were Mark himself.

Fully dressed, he was lying on his bed, sobbing like a child.

" *Luke !* " I cried. " *Don't !* "

As I spoke, he turned and looked at me, scrambled from the bed, and literally threw himself at my feet.

Embracing me about the knees, he looked up into my face.

"Rosanne! Rosanne!" he cried. "I am *blind!* . . . I am *blind!* . . . Forgive me, Rosanne, for I am *blind!* . . .

My heart seemed to sink within me, and I felt sick with disgust and misery and shame. To pretend like this, when *he knew that I knew* that he had seen me as he looked up, had flinched and turned pale—had even said my name though I had not spoken. How could he possibly sham blindness after that?

For a moment I could find no words . . . Then, as he clung to me—acting his part—babbling of his blindness—making it his excuse—using its appeal once again—my patience failed, my anger boiled over, speech poured from my lips in swift and sudden spate, and I lashed him cruelly with my contempt and sudden hate.

All the bitterness and disgust I felt for his shame . . . all my sense of loss and injury . . . all my love for Mark . . . and there he grovelled at my feet weeping and crying that he was *blind*.

Lies . . . all lies, humbug, acting . . .

I tore his hands away and, thrusting him from me, I hurried from the room, bewildered, foiled and defeated by his utter—*impossibility*.

Blind! When I had proved in half a dozen ways that he could see perfectly, and when I had just had the absolute and unhesitating assurance of a distinguished oculist that he was not blind. And had I not had such assurance, had I not found him out for myself, even before I silently entered the room that afternoon and he looked up, saw me, flushed guiltily, turned pale, and then uttered my name?

How *could* I now do as Mark would have done?

But surely, even Mark would have turned against

him after that exhibition of cowardly lying, swindling, avoidance of trouble and reproach.

When I reached my bedroom, I was trembling and shaking as though in the cold stage of fever. I was certainly in the cold stage of fierce anger, and I felt that I could not stay another hour beneath the same roof with this incorrigible impostor and cheat ; false to his brother who worshipped him ; false to me who had been willing to give up my life to looking after him. . . . Unfaithful to me—and with Giulia of all people. I wondered it was not with my own maid. Perhaps it had been.

I would order the car, go up to London and—from the hotel at which the family always stayed and where we were not numbers but honoured guests—I would write to him, tell him that when he had read this letter, as well he could, I should be glad if he'd write me an answer with his own hand and with a pen, as well he could. I would ask him what he proposed to do, for I had not the slightest intention of returning to the house while he was there. I would strongly advise him to cease his pretence of blindness, and ask him whether he wished to marry Giulia, in which case I would divorce him. I would also sting his pride—if he had any—by offering to give him and her an adequate allowance upon which to live, provided I never saw either of them again. . . .

I rose to ring the bell for Johnson, and then remembered. Appearances must be maintained. I would sleep here to-night and go to London immediately after breakfast in the morning. I would lock my door for the night, and if Luke wished to come along and whine again about his blindness, he could do it through the keyhole, the miserable, spineless rogue and liar.

IX

BUT the spirit of Mark, like the Hound of Heaven, followed me. During the night, and on the journey to London, I had thought of how the new state of affairs would affect me personally ; of how I should tell Mark (I would not tell him of the blindness swindle, for it would break his heart, but I would tell him that Luke and I were separating, for I felt I did owe that much to myself) ; of how and where I should live while Luke was recovering his blindness ; of whether I might not order him to recover it quite suddenly, as shell-shocked men have done ; of what I should do until the decree *nisi* was made absolute ; and, with longing and hope and that same gleam of joy in it all, of whether it would not be possible for me to travel to that place in Algeria which was the depôt of the French Foreign Legion. There could be no harm in that, surely ; especially after Luke had married his Giulia, if that was what he intended to do.

Mark was my best and greatest and dearest friend, and surely I could travel to places where I might see him ?

Day-dreams !

But when I had reached the hotel, unpacked and sat down to rest in the un-homelike, unfriendly sitting-room, I weakened. Closing my eyes, I strove to

imagine that Mark was there with me, sitting in the arm-chair on the other side of the fireplace. Perhaps I was too successful, for Mark seemed rather to be pleading for Luke than to be loving and comforting me.

Against my will, I had to see Luke once more as Mark saw him. I had to understand, to make allowances, to forgive him—seventy times seven. I had to remember that Luke was not as other men; that he was an artist; that he had been spoilt from babyhood; and that Mark himself had been one of the worst offenders in this respect. Before long, I felt that, in punishing Luke, I should be punishing Mark himself, for his sin of spoiling his brother.

I was forced to remember how heroically Luke had volunteered to fight for Right against Might; to remember how he had fought with the greatest courage; to remember that he had been shell-shocked; to remember that it was quite possible that he had, for a little while, been genuinely blind after the explosion; to remember that what was hardship and suffering to a strong and stolid man like Mark, was agony unbearable to a sensitive, highly strung æsthete like Luke. All sorts of things I was forced to remember, and all sorts of sloppy sentimental tags and *clichés* would keep floating unbidden through my mind: "To err is human, to forgive divine" . . . "*Tout comprendre c'est tout pardonner*" . . . "Judge not that ye be not judged" . . . "If a man smite ye on the right cheek" . . . though God alone knew how cruelly Luke had smitten me.

And by the time I had sat unmoving in that chair for a few dreadful hours, the worst hours of my life, I was defeated. Mark had won.

In other words, Luke had won again.

I must go back. I must forgive him. I must ask him what he wanted—and give it him with both hands. When he flung himself at my feet again, I must run my fingers through his silky curly hair and say,

“ Yes, poor Lukie is blind, but we are going to make him better. And poor Lukie loves Giulia, and we are going to make everything nice and easy for him. . . .”
Bah ! . . .

But after a while I managed to cast that devil out too. And when I rose to my feet, with a sigh, it was only one of regret that Luke was Luke and Mark was Mark—and that I was nothing to either of them.

Well, well. . . .

§ 2

By the time I arrived home that evening, I was quite resigned. Not happy. Not content. But on the other hand, not angry, not bitter. Just resigned.

And honestly and truly I can say that I *had* forgiven Luke and was prepared to do whatever he wanted.

For that, I am thankful to this day.

Thank you, Mark.

For I was not called upon to act with superhuman forbearance and noble magnanimity ; to forgive Luke once again ; and for the thousandth time to pretend that all was as Luke could like it to be.

For Luke was dead.

I don't know—no one knows—why Luke died.

An old groom, Valentine Jermyn, who had been with the Tuylers for thirty years, last saw him alive, and gives sole testimony as to Luke's end.

As the car came up the drive, Jermyn stood in the way, shouting, with arms extended.

I could see that something was wrong. Something terrible. For Jermyn was wildly incoherent and tears were streaming down his rather rascally face. Giving credit where credit is due, Jermyn was truly and deeply moved—more so than I was—filled with horror, and broken-hearted at the death of his master, as he regarded Luke.

“What has happened? What has happened?” I cried as I jumped out of the car. . . .

“All woild and daverdy ’e looked. All moidered ’e wur. Coom rooshin’ out o’ the ’ouse wi’ his white stick. Feelin’ round wi’ un and tappin’, till ’e’s set roight fer path to crossin’-gate. Not like usual, e’ wurn’t steppin’ along bold and easy, so as anyone wouldn’t know un was blind. Not like that ’e wurn’t s’arternoon, but all woild and daverdy, strikin’ and feelin’ round wi’ white stick, an’ bumpin’ into trees an’ bushes. Stumblin’ over things an’ blunderin’ on to flower-beds. I seen un and thinkin’ summat was wrong I coughs respectful an’ speaks up an’ said,

“‘Arternoon, Mas’r Luke,’ an’ ’e says,

“‘Jermyn,’ ’e says, ‘see me roight to crossin’-gate. Coom ’ere, damn ye,’ ’e says, ‘so’s I can get ahoold o’ thy arm. . . . To crossin’-gate,’ ’e says, ‘quick.’

“An’ I leads un down to crossin’-gate and he catches aholt on it.

“‘Won’t ee want I fer to lead ee back to house, Mas’r Luke?’ I asks.

“‘No. Get to Hell out o’ this. Go on. Go away to staables and stay there,’ ’e says. ‘An’ keep on gravel-path so’s I hear thee agooiin’.

“So thinkin’ he was actin’ funny, but not thinkin’

nothing was real wrong, I goes and leaves un. . . . Sooner I'd 'ave 'acked me feet off wi' chopper ef I 'ad known what was to 'appen."

And here Jermyn pulled out a filthy red-and-white spotted handkerchief and unashamedly mopped his streaming eyes.

"Get *on*, man, get *on*," I urged. "What happened? *Where is he?*"

"Afore I could get fifty yards away from gate, I hears little gate bump, and knawed 'e'd gone through. Then I stops and thinks 'adn't I better go back fer to see 'im safe across railway to little crossin'-gate t'other side, though I knows if 'e 'ears me 'e'll rage turr'ble fer me disobeyin' 'im.

"An' as I stands thinkin' I better go back so fur as I can see un walkin' across, but keepin' so's 'e won't know I'm follerin' un, I hears train. *By Goord!* I thinks. *'Tis train!* An' I runs . . ."

Jermyn broke down again. And I could have shaken him.

"*Yes?*" I said. "*Yes?*", trying to keep cool.

"'Twere too late, Ma'am. Mas'r Luke 'e'd crossed in front o' train. Swung and tapped all round 'im wi' stick, 'e did, then 'e turned about to come back."

"He was run over?" I whispered, as I seized the door of the car for support.

"Not ezzactly, Ma'am. . . . Train struck 'im and knocked 'im floyin' 'ead over 'eels into ditch."

"*He's dead?*"

Jermyn nodded his head as he crammed the red handkerchief against his mouth.

"Ar!" he mumbled as I sat down on the running-board of the car. "Dead as a corp."

"Mas'r Luke!" he blubbered. "I learned un to

ride. Chucked un up on his first pony . . . trained 'is first 'unter. . . . Rode be'oind 'im to 'ounds . . . An' always a foine well-plucked little b——" He broke down.

Here was another who loved Luke. This was real and honest grief.

"Where is he?"

"Up to house, Ma'am. On's bed. We took un up on 'urdle and sent for Doctor.

"*'No good,'* Doctor tells Mr. Johnson. *'Broke 'is poor bloody neck,'* 'e says. *'Aye, and every bone in his poor bloody body.'* . . . My Mas'r Luke! . . ."

And he turned and walked quickly away, sobbing.

§ 3

When I could think coherently, which was long after the inquest and funeral—oh, the bitter savage cruelty of that inquest, and of all such inquests—one thought perpetually persisted in my mind until it was an *idée fixe* which bade fair to drive me mad.

Had he committed suicide? Or was he play-acting—proving his false blindness before even so poor an audience as a groom and the engine-driver and fireman of a slow local train? Had he crossed in front of the train and, suddenly succumbing to temptation, turned back and flung himself in front of the engine? Or had he thought there was time to rush back, giving the engine-driver, the fireman and Jermyn something to talk about, something that everyone would talk about—and that would eventually come to my ears—of what a terribly narrow escape poor blind Mr. Luke Tulyer had had; perhaps some talk in the village of how that

wife of his ought to look after him better and see that he wasn't exposed to such risks?

But if so, why had he ordered Jermyn to go to the stables, a quarter of a mile distant from where the little rural line cut off the park grounds from some pheasant preserves? Perhaps because he knew Jermyn would not obey him, after his exhibition of being 'woild and daverdy.' Perhaps because he knew that the train was due to pass within a minute, and Jermyn would see how narrow an escape his poor blind master had.

Suicide—or exhibitionism and cunning demonstration of "total blindness"?

Why should he commit suicide? In rage and fear and resentment at being found out, both in his imposture and his unfaithfulness?

No. If I knew my Luke, he would have needed better grounds than that for suicide.

Suicide—to punish me for my wickedness in catching him out as swindler and adulterer? No. Not Luke.

I came to the conclusion that in a state of hysteria, wild, as Jermyn said, he had given a silly and pointless exhibition of blindness combined with physical and mental illness, and had fallen a victim to his own folly; had misjudged the speed of the train; had tripped over a sleeper or the line itself, and so been killed.

Suicide I ruled out; and accepted the law's verdict of Death by Misadventure.

X

AND now to write to Mark.
To tell Mark that Luke was dead, the hardest and most terrible thing I ever had to do.

And by the time I had finished, I found that I had not said one word to blacken Luke's memory ! Not one word of his sham blindness and the wicked imposture by means of which he had come between me and Mark ; not one word about his beastly infidelity, whereby he had broken the false bond wrought by his falseness.

Just that Luke was dead, killed by a train as he crossed our little private level-crossing. *And if Mark thought that I should have watched over Luke better, and seen to it that he was not left to cross the railway alone,* he would never say so, he would never reproach me for my careless care of his poor blind brother.

I knew it would be the hardest and cruellest blow that poor Mark would ever receive, hard and cruel as his life had been for years. But I felt that I must of course tell him. For me to pretend that it was an unnecessary cruelty, inasmuch as he might be killed in battle without ever knowing that he had lost Luke, was mere cowardly special-pleading on my part.

So I told him—and received no answer.

Mark's silence persisted for so long that I decided that I would go in search of him ; that I would turn

into fact the hitherto foolish and romantic day-dream of my seeking a Soldier of the Legion throughout Algeria and Morocco, in war-time.

§ 2

I could write a whole book about my adventures on that quest.

Rosanne in search of a Husband.

That's what it came to ; but I preferred to call it Rosanne in search of Mark—just for the joy of seeing him again and talking to him.

I would have wandered all over the world throughout the rest of my life, for that alone.

I received great kindness, courtesy and consideration from the French authorities the whole way, right from Headquarters at Paris to Sidi-bel-Abbès in Algeria, and thence to the Hospital and Convalescent Camp at Arzeu.

Mark did not have to finish his time in the Legion, as the *Conseil de Réforme* invalidated him out instead of sending him back to the fighting. He had been very badly wounded ; and that he was in a terrible state of health, owing to fever and dysentery (and doubtless to Luke's death), was obvious to anyone, layman or doctor. Whether our story weighed at all with the gallant French officers of the *Conseil* I don't know ; but after a period which seemed long to me, but was of course far shorter than it would have been had Mark had to return to Maroc, we left Sidi-bel-Abbès and, via Oran, Marseilles and Paris, returned to Courtesy Court.

§ 3

Mark was quite obviously in a queer state of mind.

I think he was inclined to praise God, every waking minute, that he was alive and back again at Courtesy Court, and at the same time to blame Him for the terrible accident that had robbed him of Luke, the other, and to his mind the better, half of himself.

I endeavoured to comfort him by well-meaning hypocritical talk of how it was really better so, better that poor Luke should be dead than living a life of blindness, an artist Samson, his beloved home his Gaza. But this did not appear to bring much comfort to Mark.

Well, I had got my wish, my hope, the very greatest desire of my heart—and it was dust and ashes. Mark was not happy, and, strive as I might, he grew no happier. He would fall into dark brooding moods, Mark who had never had a mood in his life. He seemed unable to read, unable to interest himself in any form of sport or game. At times, it seemed to me that the blow might prove mortal; and I knew that it was up to me to fight for him, to fight the dead Luke for the living Mark.

One evening as we sat at dinner, Mark, who was staring at the table-cloth seeing nothing and oblivious of my presence, suddenly turned to me and said,

"Did he commit suicide?"

"Who?" asked I, to gain time and pull myself together, to think, to walk warily, and give the right answer.

"Luke, of course," snapped Mark, scowling. Mark,

who had never snapped and had never scowled at me.

"Of course not. Why should he? You know what Jermyn says. He . . ."

"Yes. I know what Jermyn says. I have made him tell me a hundred times."

It was dreadful. I knew that Mark loved me. And I knew that Luke stood, and would stand, between us unless I could prevent him, unless I could *exorcise* him, in fact. My heart ached for Mark—my whole body, mind and soul ached for him of course—but what I mean is that I suffered for him and with him. He was so miserable and broken-hearted.

"Mark," said I to him one glorious morning as we were having breakfast together, "I think I'll go back to America. But I won't go until we've found the absolutely right person for you as housekeeper. A really good housekeeper and Johnson would run the domestic part of . . ."

Mark looked up, wrenched his mind back from wherever it may have been in contemplation of Luke and his unique virtues and charm, and stared at me as though he had seen me for the first time since Sidi-bel-Abbès, or rather the first time since ever he went away to the wars.

"*Rosanne!*" he said. "Don't be silly . . . I've been going to ask you . . ." He stopped.

"Ask me what?" I contrived to say, for I wasn't sure that my heart was not beating too loudly for him to be able to hear my voice.

He stood up and came round to where I was sitting at the head of the table.

"*Rosanne!*" he said in his quiet deep voice. "If

you hadn't said that about America I shouldn't . . . Rosanne, you couldn't ever . . . ever . . . love me? Not after . . . Luke? . . ."

I stood up and kissed him, and he took me in his arms. I thought he would crush me to death, and half hoped he would.

"*Rosanne!*" he whispered. "Rosanne, darling. You could . . .? You do?"

"Mark, I love you a thousand times more than ever I loved Luke."

"You'll marry me, Rosanne? . . . When?"

"Now, Mark. In the middle of breakfast, if . . ."

But I couldn't keep it up. I burst into tears, though I am not a great sniveller.

I suppose that one of the notable things about my remarkable love-affairs is that I am one of the few young persons who have received a proposal of marriage between the bacon and the marmalade.

So Mark and I were married, and settled down to live happy ever after at Courtesy Court.

EPILOGUE

BUT we didn't. We weren't happy at all. Not at first. Or, rather, we were not happy for long.

Luke came and stood between us as effectually as though he had been alive and living in the house. When Mark was not thinking of me, he was thinking of Luke, and I knew that more and more he thought of Luke and less and less he thought of me.

He did love me. He loved me perfectly and beautifully ; and I did not, I would not and I could not, utter a word of reproach. As well blame a man for loss of manual skill after his hands have been cut off. Mark and Luke had been one, and Luke had, as it were, been torn from Mark's living side, leaving a great gaping wound. It bled, and it did not heal. Actually and truly and literally, it was a case of " In their lives they were one, and in their deaths they were not divided." Mark could no more help it than he could help the colour of his eyes.

And the utmost that I could hope was that Time would effect a change ; that Time, which heals all things, would heal this wound made by the loss of Luke.

I could only hope that gradually the effect and influence of my physical presence would grow

stronger and that of Luke's ghostly presence grow weaker.

Ghostly! . . . One June morning I awoke and experienced that fairly common but utterly horrible sensation of being wide awake but unable to move. It is quite useless for anyone to tell me that I fancied I was awake. I was awake. I heard the clock ticking on the table beside my bed. I heard Mark breathing in the other bed. I saw the curtains gently moving in the light summer breeze.

It was broad daylight when I awoke, and I found afterwards that it was about four o'clock. I could hear; I could see—and I suddenly became aware, with a kind of cold horror, that I could see Luke.

He was standing at the bottom of my bed, as he had often stood in life, and was looking at me. He was staring with a look that I can only describe as one of appalling anguish and inexpressible longing. He wanted to tell me something. He yearned and strove to tell me with his eyes—and almost succeeded. But he did not speak.

It was one of the most terrifying moments of my life. By this living *rigor mortis* I was held as rigid and motionless as a corpse, utterly unable to move hand or foot.

And there Luke stood and appealed to me with a dumb yearning earnestness that was terrible to see.

I never saw anything more clearly in my life than I saw the dreadful face of poor suffering Luke.

And at last, thank God, I moved a little finger; then my hand, my arm, both arms, and broke these dreadful invisible bonds.

I sat up, found my voice and tried to speak to

Luke, tried to ask him what it was that he must say.

But he was not there.

Or, rather, he was not visible.

He was there, though. Not only there, but ever present with Mark. Mark got so that he could hardly speak of anything else but Luke and the extent to which he himself had contributed to his unhappiness and death. It became an obsession with him. Luke stood between us. He spoilt our happiness and darkened our lives. And gradually I came to hate him as much as Mark loved him, for he was spoiling Mark's life. At times, I felt it would be no exaggeration to say that he was killing him—with grief, with worry, with remorse. Imagine Mark having to feel remorse about anyone or anything!

It was dreadful, the way in which he would sit and stare at a book. Read it, without turning the pages and, suddenly looking up, say something to me about Luke. It was the same with whatever he was doing. When I persuaded him to come to the theatre, it was Luke that he saw on the stage, and when the curtain fell he would turn to me and say some such thing as,

"I don't see how it could have been an accident. But . . . It wasn't as though he . . . Yet *why* should he have committed suicide? . . . No; he'd never do that."

Then, perhaps, seeing that my face looked as tragic as his own, he'd take my hand and say,

"Not with you as his wife, darling. Who, married to you, could possibly commit suicide? But . . ."

Things were going from bad to worse, until one day

I had a bright idea, an idea for which I have ever since thanked God ; for it led to a solution of my awful problem. It led to salvation for Mark and happiness for both of us.

At breakfast one day, as he sat as usual, eating little, saying nothing and thinking, as I knew from the look on his face, of how terribly he was to blame for the tragedy that was Luke, there was a sudden crash as Luke's picture fell to the ground. The wire had broken—and I think that something broke in me.

"A damned good job," said I to myself, as we both sprang up. "And I'll throw him off his pedestal if it kills me. Worse, if it kills Mark's love for me."

But I had grown wary as well as watchful, and bided my time ; and while I was thinking it over, I suddenly had a bright idea, a notion founded on what I had been reading about psycho-analysis. (Actually, I had examined the possibilities of trying to get poor Mark psycho-analysed !)

Since "getting it all up out of the subconscious and examining it in the light of knowledge and reason" was the central idea of that form of mental healing, I would get Mark to write a sort of brief account of his life from the time he joined the French Foreign Legion with Luke, a sort of *Memoirs of Mark Twyler* ; and in it he must write the complete but simple and unadorned truth concerning Luke and himself.

If it did nothing more, it would occupy his mind, and it might do a very great deal more. It might do what I had failed to do, prove to him that he had nothing whatever with which to reproach himself regarding Luke. Or almost nothing, inasmuch as his love, kindness and forbearance could have added but little to the harm Luke had got from the spoiling that

his parents and everybody else had given him from babyhood.

Somewhat to my surprise, Mark, who had lost all interest in the care of the estate ; in his work on the local Bench, Councils and Committees ; in shooting, hunting and everything else, fell in with my suggestion and set to work, at first probably attracted merely by the idea of writing a eulogy of the wonderful Luke.

His mental and physical health began to improve almost from the day when, returning from his club in a rage and a serious state of mental turmoil, he began to write.

By the time he had finished, he was a different man.

And one evening, an evening which I shall remember until I die, and, I hope, thereafter, he came into the drawing-room where I was sitting, stood beside my chair for a minute, stroking my hair, and then seated himself opposite to me.

" Well, I've finished," he said. " At any rate, all I'm going to write."

He was smiling and looking almost happy.

" Poor old Luke," he said. " You know, Rosanne, he . . ."

I resolved to put everything to the touch, then and there.

" Mark," I interrupted, " Luke was false, untrustworthy, a fraud and . . ."

Mark sprang to his feet, a look of shocked consternation on his face.

" *Rosanne !* " he cried, "*did you know too—that he was never blind ?* "

So he knew ! I felt terrible. I felt that Mark's happiness and mine hung by a thread. I had been

merely going to tell him about Luke's infidelity to me, his adultery with Giulia. What mine had I sprung beneath us? *Mark knew of Luke's imposture!*

"Did *you* know, Mark?" I gasped. "I would never, never have told you."

"Yes, I knew," he said, "and I would never have told *you*. What did you mean when you said he was a fraud . . . false . . . ?"

"He was false to me, Mark. With Giulia."

"Good God! The hound! The *cur*!"

And I could almost hear the crash with which the great Luke fell from his lofty pedestal, to lie shattered for ever on the solid earth of fact and truth.

"Rosanne, my poor darling." . . .

We are happy enough now. Almost too happy. It doesn't seem possible that such happiness can last. Mark is the Mark I knew before he went to France; and Luke has gone out of the house and out of our lives.

For a man shall leave his father and his mother—yea, and his twin brother—and cleave unto the woman whom he loves.

It is Mark and I who are one now. We never speak willingly of Luke, but I have no doubt the day will come when we shall be able to do so quite easily, I without anger and bitterness, Mark without grief or self-reproach.

For he still loves Luke.

He always will love Luke, but he is getting that love into proper proportion, and seeing Luke in proper perspective.

He will always love him—and he will always love me. I am content.

MURRAY'S IMPERIAL LIBRARY

FOR SALE IN INDIA AND THE COLONIES ONLY.

NEW FICTION.

By DOROTHY WHIPPLE, Author of 'Greenbanks,' etc.

THE PRIORY.

A delightful story of family life set in an old Priory and full of the charm, humour and human understanding that have made the author's previous works such outstanding events in the world of fiction.

By P. C. WREN, Author of 'Beau Geste,' etc.

PAPER PRISON.

Thrilling adventure by a master of the craft of story-telling, whose list of novels is a fine record of successful fiction at its best and most readable.

By KATHLEEN NORRIS, Author of 'Heartbroken Melody,' etc.

THE RUNAWAY.

Romantic fiction of youth facing the complexities of life and love has never been better served than by the novels of Mrs. Norris, and her readers are as numerous here as in America.

By EDEN PHILLPOTTS, Author of 'Saurus,' etc.

THORN IN HER FLESH.

"Mr. Phillpotts at his best is the writer that all writers would wish to be. This story has passages of delightful humour."—*The Sunday Times*.

By MYRTLE JOHNSTON, Author of 'Hanging Johnny,' etc.

THE RISING.

A stirring story of the Ireland of the sixties full of vivid characterisation and attractive and typical humour.

By CHARLES DOUIE, Author of 'Night of Stars,' etc.

LOST HERITAGE.

Heredity and the conflicting desires that it sometimes introduces into the members of one family is movingly portrayed in this novel.

By C. E. LAWRENCE, Author of 'Gods were Sleeping,' etc.

GLORIANA.

"A writer of tact, experience and of infinite charm. The story grips, the writing shows an exquisite mind, and the impression is wholly fascinating."—*The Daily Mail*.

THE NOVELS OF P. C. WREN.

Foreign Legion Novels.

| | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------|
| BEAU GESTE. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| BEAU SABREUR. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| BEAU IDEAL. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| GOOD GESTES. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| STEPSONS OF FRANCE. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| THE WAGES OF VIRTUE. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| VALIANT DUST. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| FLAWED BLADES. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| PORT O' MISSING MEN. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| SPANISH MAINE. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| FORT IN THE JUNGLE. | 3s. 6d. net. |

Indian Novels.

| | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------|
| WORTH WILE | 7s. 6d. net. |
| THE MAN OF A GHOST. | 3s. 6d. net. |
| EXPLOSION. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| SNAKE AND THE SWORD. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| FATHER GREGORY. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| DRIFTWOOD SPARS. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| DEW AND MILDEW. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |

Other Novels by P. C. Wren.

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------|
| PAPER PRISON. | 8s. 6d. net. |
| ROUGH SHOOTING. | 7s. 6d. net. |
| CARDBOARD CASTLE. | 8s. 6d. net. |
| BUBBLE REPUTATION. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| SINBAD THE SOLDIER. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| BEGGARS' HORSES. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| ACTION AND PASSION. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| MYSTERIOUS WAYE. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| MAMMON OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| SOLDIERS OF MISFORTUNE. | 3s. 6d. net and 2s. net. |
| THE YOUNG STAGERS. | 3s. 6d. net. |

Edited by P. C. Wren.

| | |
|----------------------|----------|
| SOWING GLORY. | 2s. net. |
|----------------------|----------|

SIX OMNIBUS VOLUMES

The CONAN DOYLE HISTORICAL ROMANCES

- I RODNEY STONE ADVENTURES OF GERARD.
 UNCLE BERNAC. EXPLOITS OF BRIG. GERARD.

Four Volumes in One. 828 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

- II THE WHITE COMPANY. MICAH CLARKE.
 SIR NIGEL. THE REFUGEES.

Four Volumes in One. 1,644 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

THE COMPLETE SHERLOCK HOLMES SHORT STORIES.

- ADVENTURES. LAST BOW.
MEMOIRS. CASE-BOOK.
RETURN.

Five Volumes in One. 1,348 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

THE SHERLOCK HOLMES LONG STORIES.

- STUDY IN SCARLET. HOUND OF THE BASKERVILLES.
SIGN OF FOUR. VALLEY OF FEAR.

Four Volumes in One. 7s. 6d. net.

THE CONAN DOYLE STORIES.

- THE RING AND THE CAMP. TWILIGHT AND THE UNSEEN.
PIRATES AND BLUE WATER. ADVENTURE AND MEDICAL LIFE
TERROR AND MYSTERY. TALES OF LONG AGO.

Six Volumes in One. 1,216 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

HUMOUR AND FANTASY.

- VICE-VERSA. SALTED ALMONDS. TALKING HORSE
FALLEN IDOL. TINTED VENUS. BRASS BOTTLE.

By F. ANSTEY. 1,180 pages. 5s. net.

"The perfect holiday book."—*News Chronicle*.

"Immortal, imperishable humour."—*Punch*.

"This humorist, like a vintage wine, seems or have improved with the efflux of time."—*Morning Post*.

Conan Doyle Uniform Edition

3/6 net each

Crown 8vo., Red Cloth, Coloured Top, Picture Wrapper.

**THE ADVENTURES OF SHERLOCK HOLMES.
SIR NIGEL.**

THE CASE-BOOK OF SHERLOCK HOLMES.

THE MEMOIRS OF SHERLOCK HOLMES.

THE VALLEY OF FEAR.

HIS LAST BOW.

THE RETURN OF SHERLOCK HOLMES.

THE REFUGEES.

THE MARACOT DEEP.

THE WHITE COMPANY.

THE ADVENTURES OF GERARD.

DANGER! AND OTHER STORIES.

THE EXPLOITS OF BRIGADIER GERARD.

RODNEY STONE.

A DUET.

THE GREEN FLAG.

THE HOUND OF THE BASKERVILLES.

ROUND THE FIRE STORIES.

THE SIGN OF FOUR.

THE STARK MUNRO LETTERS.

THE LAST GALLEY.

MICAH CLARKE.

CAPTAIN OF THE POLESTAR.

UNCLE BERNAC.

THE TRAGEDY OF THE "KOROSKO."

THROUGH THE MAGIC DOOR.

THE LOST WORLD.

ROUND THE RED LAMP.

**RECENT ADDITIONS TO
MURRAY'S POPULAR 3s. 6d. net NOVELS**

| | |
|--|--------------------|
| THE MAN OF A GHOST. | P. C. WREN. |
| BREAD INTO ROSES. | KATHLEEN NORRIS. |
| QUINNEYS'. | HORACE A. VACHELL. |
| THE DEVIL'S FINGER. | A. A. IRVINE. |
| FORT IN THE JUNGLE. | P. C. WREN. |
| BUBBLE REPUTATION. | P. C. WREN. |
| THE MYSTERY OF PINE POINT. | KATHLEEN NORRIS. |
| THE SEA-GULL. | KATHLEEN NORRIS. |
| WHICH WAY CAME DEATH? | FAITH WOLSELEY. |
| HIGH ADVENTURE IN DARIEN. | ALLAN GOVAN. |
| THE PEACOCK PATTERN. | ALLAN GOVAN. |
| SPANISH MAINE. | P. C. WREN. |
| ON APPROVAL, and other Stories. | DOROTHY WHIPPLE |
| SHINING WINDOWS. | KATHLEEN NORRIS. |
| THE MAIDEN. | MYRTLE JOHNSTON. |
| SQUEEZE. | JOHN LAMBOURNE. |
| THEY KNEW MR. KNIGHT. | DOROTHY WHIPPLE. |

Illustrated Cheap Editions.

BEAU GESTE.

By P. C. WREN. With Portrait of the Author, and 4 Coloured Plates and 25 Black and White Illustrations. 3s. 6d. net.

MISS ESPERANCE AND MR. WYCHERLY.

By L. ALLEN HARKER. With 44 Line Illustrations and a Frontispiece in 3 Colours by SYBIL TAWSE. 3s. 6d. net.

A Selection of
MURRAY'S 2/6 net NOVELS

Crown 8vo. full-length novels, with Picture Wrappers, in colour.

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------|
| PHULMAT OF THE HILLS. | Verrier Elwin. |
| NIGHT OF STARS. | Charles Douie. |
| THE GODS WERE SLEEPING. | C. E. Lawrence. |
| BETWEEN THE TWO TWILIGHTS. | Alan Jenkins. |
| MARCHING MINSTREL. | Violet Campbell. |
| TO WHAT PURPOSE. | A. M. Westwood. |
| THE OLD LADY. | C. E. Lawrence. |
| ROSE AND THORN. | Mary Lutyens. |
| SET THEM AS A BANNER. | John le Strange. |
| PERCHANCE TO DREAM. | Mary Lutyens. |
| DOWN THE SKY. | Margaret D'Arcy. |
| PORTRAIT IN PASTEL. | Marjorie Booth. |
| THE BROKEN ROAD. | A. E. W. Mason. |
| THE FOUR FEATHERS. | A. E. W. Mason. |
| THE TRUANTS. | A. E. W. Mason. |
| SEED OF ADAM. | Violet Campbell. |
| INKY WOOING. | John Lambourne. |
| THE KINGDOM THAT WAS. | John Lambourne. |
| THE UNMEASURED PLACE. | John Lambourne. |
| TROOPER FAULT. | John Lambourne. |
| FORTHCOMING MARRIAGES. | Mary Lutyens. |
| JESS. | H. Rider Haggard. |
| UNDER THE RED ROBE. | Stanley J. Weyman. |
| THE NEW RECTOR. | Stanley J. Weyman. |
| THE THIEF OF VIRTUE. | Eden Phillpotts. |
| JAN AND HER JOB. | L. Allen Harker. |
| BAWBEE JOCK. | Amy McLaren. |
| THE DEVOURING FIRE. | Lord Gorell. |
| YOUNG MISTLEY. | H. Seton Merriman. |
| THE PHANTOM FUTURE. | H. Seton Merriman. |
| PRISONERS AND CAPTIVES. | H. Seton Merriman. |
| JOHN FRENESHAM, K.C. | Sinclair Murray. |
| NO SECRETS ISLAND. | Alan Sullivan. |

MURRAY'S 2/- net NOVELS

NEW ADDITIONS

P. C. Wren.

BUBBLE REPUTATION.

'A first-rate novel well compounded of crime, romance and modern life, and full of thrills.'—*The Nottingham Guardian*.

Kathleen Norris.

SECRET MARRIAGE.

'To be classed with Mrs. Norris' best work. It is a charming story and well told.'—*The Christian Science Monitor*.

THE MYSTERY OF PINE POINT.

'To be recommended, entirely convincing. I hope Mrs. Norris will adventure into the thriller class again.'—*The Observer*.

Anstey, F.

VICE VERSA. The best and best-known laughter-making story of school.

Atherton, Gertrude.

THE CRYSTAL CUP. An unusual story of an ultra-modern woman.

Castle, Agnes and Egerton.

WROTH. A costume romance of the Regency, with galloping post-chaises, dare-devil young noblemen, and a proud heroine.

Copplestone, Bennet.

THE LOST NAVAL PAPERS. Exciting stories which reveal the English Secret Service as it really is: silent and supremely competent.

De la Pasture, Mrs. Henry

PETER'S MOTHER. 'Peter's mother is as delightful a character as the imagination of a novel writer ever figured forth.'—*Daily Telegraph*.

Diver, Maud

A WILD BIRD. 'Exceptional in the delicacy with which the characters are drawn, and in its affectionate understanding of the best side of India. A sound piece of work.'—*Times*

BRAVE WINGS. Being PART II of 'A WILD BIRD.' This book continues the story of Eve Challoner that was begun in 'A Wild Bird.' For the whole story the books should be read in the right sequence.

MURRAY'S 2s. net NOVELS—*continued*

Diver, Maud—*continued*

'BUT YESTERDAY—' 'An arresting and powerful book. A strong story full of unexpected happenings.'—*Daily Chronicle*.

LONELY FURROW. One of her most popular Indian romances.

UNCONQUERED. "'Unconquered" would place Mrs. Diver in the front rank of our novelists were she not already there.'—*Daily Graphic*.

STRANGE ROADS. Of the courage of a man, and the faith of a woman.

SIEGE PERILOUS. 'A thoroughly enjoyable and to-be-recommended book.'—*Daily Telegraph*.

Doyle, A. Conan

THE MARACOT DEEP, and Other Stories. 'Conan Doyle is a storyteller of genius. He achieves effects in the fantastic and the macabre of which few living authors are capable.'—*Sunday Referee*.

THE CASE-BOOK OF SHERLOCK HOLMES. 'These last adventures show no signs of flagging vigour or failing ingenuity.'—*Daily Telegraph*.

UNCLE BERNAC. A memory of the Empire. A stirring romance of the Napoleonic Period.

MICAH CLARKE. A moving romance of the Monmouth Rising—of stirring gallantry and of proved appeal.

THE FIRM OF GIRDLESTONE. 'A romance of the unromantic' is the author's description of this tale, which abounds in lively incidents.

RODNEY STONE. A gallant, stirring story of sport and sportsmen in olden times.

THE WHITE COMPANY. What of the men? The men were bred in England: The bowmen—the yeomen—the lads of dale and fell.

SIR NIGEL. A prelude to 'The White Company,' wherein the gallant Sir Nigel wins his spurs and his lady.

ADVENTURES OF GERARD. Of the greater adventures. With sword, imagination and wit, he served Romance—and the reader—well.

THE EXPLOITS OF BRIGADIER GERARD. Intrepid, witty and always gay is the hero of these amazing exploits.

THE ADVENTURES OF SHERLOCK HOLMES. Keenest thrills and mysteries *de luxe* which stir the blood and make the heart beat faster.

THE MEMOIRS OF SHERLOCK HOLMES. Thousands of his admirers will revel in these memoirs of the famous sleuth.

THE RETURN OF SHERLOCK HOLMES. Again is Sherlock Holmes triumphant, with his established methods ever newly applied.

MURRAY'S 2s. net NOVELS—*continued*

Doyle, A. Conan—*continued*

THE HOUND OF THE BASKERVILLES. A Curse, then a Mystery ; at last the solution by that master, Sherlock Holmes.

THE SIGN OF FOUR. Who murdered Sholto ? The last and highest court of appeal in detection, Sherlock Holmes, solved the problem.

HIS LAST BOW. SOME REMINISCENCES OF SHERLOCK HOLMES
'Of the first vintage, sparkling, rich and very palatable.'—*Daily Graphic*.

VALLEY OF FEAR. Another Sherlock Holmes story, rich in excitement.

COLLECTED POEMS. 'Such ringing rhymes and inspiring sentiments deserve to be popular wherever the national character is valued at its true worth.'—*Daily Telegraph*.

Gorell, Lord

THE DEVOURING FIRE. 'Come with all your wariness and realism about you, yet he will force you to take the strange happenings on credit. At last something new has come from the mystery-makers.'—*Times*.

Haggard, H. Rider

JESS. A famous romance that has charmed thousands.

MOON OF ISRAEL. 'A moving and stirring tale, with an abundance of exciting episodes. A vivid piece of writing.'—*Daily Graphic*.

Harker, L. Allen

MR. WYCHERLY'S WARDS. One of the most fascinating child-creations in modern fiction.

MISS ESPERANCE AND MR. WYCHERLY. Full of tenderness, humanity, and charm. A book of pure delight.

MONTAGU WYCHERLY. The Wycherlys have captured the hearts of many thousands of readers. This is the story of Montagu grown up.

JAN AND HER JOB. Her people are delightful, her children a joy.

Hope, Anthony

TRISTRAM OF BLENT. Originality of construction, of character and of dialogue.

Lambourne, John

TROOPER FAULT. 'As good as Conan Doyle at his best.'—
Birmingham Post.

MURRAY'S 2s. net NOVELS—*continued*

Mackenna, R. W.

O ROWAN TREE. 'Homely, pathetic, humorous, tragic and lofty in spirit and told with all the charm of a born story-teller.'—*Scotsman*.

FLOWER O' THE HEATHER. A delightful romance by an author who has quickly gained the hearts of all who love Scotland.

BRACKEN AND THISTLEDOWN. Stories and studies of Scottish village life and character.

THROUGH FLOOD AND FIRE. 'He has the power of vivid story-telling, a remarkable gift for atmosphere, and, finest of all, his people are real human stuff.'—*Daily Telegraph*.

McLaren, Amy

BAWBEE JOCK. The human story of a great love which nearly—but not quite—ended in tragedy.

Macnaughtan, S.

A LAME DOG'S DIARY. 'One of the most amusing books of the year.'—*Evening Standard*.

Mason, A. E. W.

THE BROKEN ROAD. A great romance of the Indian frontier, filled with the glowing colours of the East.

THE FOUR FEATHERS. A. E. W. Mason's most famous novel. A romance of courage, vivid and inspiring.

Merriman, Henry Seton

THE SOWERS. Of Russia in the old days. A story of personal courage and moving circumstance.

FROM ONE GENERATION TO ANOTHER. A romance of Indian Mutiny days, giving a remarkable pen-picture of contrasting characters.

WITH EDGED TOOLS. Romance, written with human insight and sparkling wit.

BARLASCH OF THE GUARD. 'Barlasch is a masterpiece.'

RODEN'S CORNER. An engrossing drama—full of brilliant dialogue.

FLOTSAM. A fine tale by a storyteller of the front rank. Pluck, devotion and courage: epigram, interest, joy—those are the ingredients.

Norris, Kathleen

SHINING WINDOWS. 'You'll enjoy this book in any mood and find your spirits rising.'—*The Daily Mirror*.

BEAUTY'S DAUGHTER. 'A penetrating study in the problem of marriage.'—*The Church of England Newspaper*.

FALSE MORNING. 'A most readable romance . . . full of nice people and natural talk.'—*Sunday Times*.

MURRAY'S 2s. net NOVELS—*continued*

Norris, Kathleen—*continued*

TAMARA. 'Mrs. Norris gives some delightful character sketches in human situations.'—*Edinburgh Evening News*.

WIFE FOR SALE. "Mrs. Norris tells a story delightfully and in the most refreshing manner."—*The Queen*.

SECOND-HAND WIFE. "A most readable novel. Fresh and warmly alive."—*Everyman*.

WALLS OF GOLD. "Mrs. Norris is a clever fashioner of readable novels."—*Morning Post*.

TANGLED LOVE. "There is no doubting she has maintained the Norris tradition."—*Daily Telegraph*.

TREEHAVEN. 'Mrs. Norris never loses her magic.'—*Everyman*.

THE LUCKY LAWRENCES. 'Gail is a lovable figure.'—*The Times*.

RED SILENCE. 'So refreshing and pleasant.'—*Aberdeen Press*.

PASSION FLOWER. 'She can tell a story!'—*Sunday Referee*.

STORM HOUSE. 'Pleasantly written, human and true.'—*Liverpool Post*

BELLE-MÈRE. 'Deserves to be a best-seller!'—*News Chronicle*.

LUCRETIA LOMBARD. 'Lucretia is a charming creature.'—*News Chronicle*.

THE LOVE OF JULIE BOREL. 'Thoroughly attractive.'—*Birmingham Gazette*.

PASSION FLOWER. 'Mrs. Norris is immensely competent: she can tell a good story, and keep a firm hand on laughter and tears.'—*Sunday Referee*.

THE LUCKY LAWRENCES. 'Gail is a lovable figure, one who will undoubtedly win her way into the affections of Mrs. Norris's readers.'—*Times*.

HILDEGARDE. 'A rich, colourful theme, elaborated by Mrs. Norris with descriptive detail and impeccable skill.'—*Aberdeen Press and Journal*

THREE MEN AND DIANA. 'Again Mrs. Norris has created one of her charming heroines.'—*The Daily Telegraph*.

BARBERRY BUSH. 'A full and engrossing narrative.' Readers will enjoy Mrs. Norris's story.'—*Daily News*.

OUTLAW LOVE. 'As full of excitements and chivalrous gallantry and fiery romance as Mrs. Norris can pack it; and she is a very good packer.'—*Evening News*.

THE FOOLISH VIRGIN. 'Told with a freshness and sureness of touch that at once delight and convince the reader.'—*Scotsman*.

MURRAY'S 2s. net NOVELS—*continued*

Norris, Kathleen—*continued*

JOSSELYN'S WIFE. The skein of life tangled by misunderstanding, unravelled by faith and love.

HARRIET AND THE PIPER. Faced with a terrible problem, Harriet takes the harder course and wins through to love's reward.

ROSE OF THE WORLD. Love sacrificed and yet triumphant.

SISTERS. A realistic study of life and the conflict of love and hate.

MOTHER. This story expresses something of the understanding of life and motherhood, with their pathos, joy and pain.

THE STORY OF JULIA PAGE. 'Julia is a counsel of hope. She starts with every drawback and "makes good."'—*Evening Standard*.

MARTIE THE UNCONQUERED. The story of how Martie wins through—with only her buoyant youth, and beauty to help.

THE HEART OF RACHAEL. The very human study of a woman's heart tried in the crucible of marriage.

THE BELOVED WOMAN. 'A lovable story of really lovable people whose acquaintance it is good to make.'—*Sunday Times*.

LITTLE SHIPS. 'Mrs. Norris has that rare gift of creating interest in ordinary people in ordinary situations.'—*Times*.

THE BLACK FLEMINGS. A tale of die-hard family pride and tradition and of up-to-date youth—and naturally in the end youth wins.

Phillipotts, Eden

WIDECOMBE FAIR. A delightfully human comedy of village life from the master hand of Devonshire's greatest novelist.

THE THIEF OF VIRTUE.

'It's Dartmoor, be it understood, | And say "The Thief of Virtue's" good
Zo there's no call for me to go | For all his Dartmoor tales be zo.'—

Punch.

Stratton-Porter, Gene

FRECKLES. The love story of a lonely waif and his Swamp Angel.

A DAUGHTER OF THE LAND. A girl's struggle for freedom, pictured with Mrs. Stratton-Porter's distinguishing insight.

MICHAEL O'HALLORAN. BE SQUARE is Mickey's slogan. To read this refreshing story is a tonic. It is full of the joy of life.

LADDIE. Written in quite unique fashion and holding a freshness and charm given to few novels.

THE WHITE FLAG. 'A stronger, deeper, and more vividly human story than any she has written.'—*Daily Mail*.

HER FATHER'S DAUGHTER. Linda Strong is a clear-eyed modern girl. Her personality radiates vigour and her heart is the home of truth.

MURRAY'S 2s. net NOVELS—*continued*

Vachell, Horace A.

BROTHERS. 'A book to love and to live in awhile, and a book which will not lightly be forgotten.'—*Westminster Gazette*.

THE HILL. A romance of Friendship. A fine, thoroughly manly novel.

JOHN VERNEY. In which the author relates the later life of the hero of 'The Hill' and his friends.

QUINNEYS'. A lovable story that makes real and lasting friends.

THE SHADOWY THIRD. 'A study of a human soul, full of real discernment and sympathy.'—*Evening Standard*.

THE FACE OF CLAY. 'A powerful and fascinating book, with elements of tragedy, as well as pathos and humour.'—*Daily Chronicle*.

Weyman, Stanley J.

OVINGTON'S BANK. A truly great story from the pen of the admitted master of historical romance.

THE NEW RECTOR. An absorbing story of compelling human interest.

UNDER THE RED ROBE. The famous romance of the days of Cardinal Richelieu.

QUEEN'S FOLLY. 'Fine proportion and sound colour. "Queen's Folly" is good art and good history.'—*Observer*.

Whipple, Dorothy

THEY KNEW MR. KNIGHT. 'If anybody's novel can be said to be everybody's novel, here it is.'—*Country Life*.

GREENBANKS. 'Astonishing powers as a portrait painter.'—RALPH STRAUS in the *Sunday Times*.

Wren, P. C.

SPANISH MAINE. 'Although strong meat, it is exceptionally good reading.'—*The Liverpool Post*.

EXPLOSION. 'A born story-teller. The gallant Major undoubtedly knows his India.'—*The Bystander*.

SINBAD THE SOLDIER. 'The unexpected is always happening—first-rate entertainment.'—*The Morning Post*.

BEGGARS' HORSES. 'Well up to his standard in unusual excitement. There is no lack of genuine thrills.'—*The Sunday Times*.

MURRAY'S 2s. net NOVELS—*continued*

P. C. Wren—*continued*

PORT O' MISSING MEN: Strange Tales of the Stranger Regiment. 'Irresistible; in his happiest vein. All first rate.'—*Glasgow Herald*.

ACTION AND PASSION. 'The P. C. Wren of "Beau Geste" is with us again. It is superbly told.'—*Saturday Review*.

FLAWED BLADES. 'These are good stories and there is red blood in them.'—*Sunday Express*.

VALIANT DUST. 'The same rich colour and deep passion which characterized "Beau Geste."'—*The Star*.

MYSTERIOUS WAYE. 'One excitement follows another, and the best scene of all leaves one gasping at its audacity.'—*Sunday Times*.

THE MAMMON OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. 'A real thriller. Simply satanic subtlety. Buy, beg, borrow, or steal it.'—*Morning Post*.

SOLDIERS OF MISFORTUNE. 'Has all the qualities—vividness, pace, humour, and terrific incident.'—*Daily News*.

BEAU GESTE. This is the First Edition at Two Shillings of P. C. Wren's famous novel.

BEAU SABREUR. 'As good as "Beau Geste."'—*Daily Chronicle*.

BEAU IDEAL. 'Another "Beau Geste." A fine story full of humour and strategical resource.'—*Daily Mail*.

GOOD GESTES. Stories of Beau Geste, his brothers, and certain of their comrades in the French Legion.

THE WAGES OF VIRTUE. A vivid picture of life in the French Foreign Legion.

STEPSONS OF FRANCE. True tales of the Foreign Legion.

THE SNAKE AND THE SWORD. 'A story often tragic in its incident, but powerful in holding the reader's interest.'—*Glasgow Herald*.

DEW AND MILDEW. 'The author not only knows his India, he loves her.'—*Harrogate Herald*.

FATHER GREGORY. 'Provides "human documents," the study of which is varied and enjoyable.'—*The Times*.

DRIFTWOOD SPARS. 'Its hero is the son of a Scottish mother and a Pathan father. And things do happen.'—*Birmingham News*.

Edited by P. C. Wren

SOWING GLORY: The Memoirs of Mary "Ambree," the English woman Legionary. 'The author is to be congratulated.'—*The Times*.

DATE OF ISSUE

This book must be returned
within 3, 7, 14 days of its issue. A
fine of ONE ANNA per day will
be charged if the book is overdue.

| | |
|--|--|
| | |
|--|--|

